

HENRY

written by BROOKE EM

FICTIONAL STORY **HENRY**

PLOT: A young powerful pyrokinetic man, and his grandmother work together to control his abilities; and fight foes that get in the way of their happy family.

TAYLOR - the town where the 'Henry' story is based at. A cold, windy town with very cold winters; and cool summers. Home to locations such as - Taylor Police Station; Taylor River; Taylor River Motel; Beth's Diner; Taylor Army Base, Taylor Uni)

CHARACTERS:

- **HENRY JAMES LOVELL:** protagonist, Edith's grandson; Beth's & Vince's son; powerful red pyrokinesis; brown hair; green eyes; skinny but muscular physique, Australian;
- **EDITH:** supporting character; grandmother of Henry, mother of Beth; occupation counsellor; loving; caring; grey hair; hazel eyes; chubby, Australian
- **FRED:** family friend of the Lovell Family, general surgeon at Taylor General Hospital; had a crush on Beth during schooldays; weary of Henry; chubby, Australian
- **VINCE:** Henry's evil father; chemical engineer, sadistic, evil, intelligent; chubby, Australian
- **BETH:** the late mother of Henry, the late daughter of Edith, the ex-wife of Vince, famous chef at Beth's Diner, well known around the town of Taylor, brown hair, hazel eyes, lean build, loving, caring
- **INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON:** Inspector of Taylor Police Station; weary of Henry; protects the community of Taylor, Australian
- **BOBBY:** dwarf 30-year old sidekick of Vince, jobless; buddy of Vince; looks at Henry as superior; chubby, Australian
- **BARTENDER:** Bartender at Beth's Diner, lean physique, Australian

- SUZIE: best friend of the late Beth during schooldays, accountant, mother of Jaffa, Indian, brown eyes, brown hair, caring, loving
 - JAFFA: daughter of Susie, dreams of becoming a doctor, schizophrenic, Indian, brown eyes, brown hair, loving, caring, intern at Taylor General Hospital
 - PASTOR JACKSON: pastor at Taylor Uniting Church; strongly dislikes Henry;

 #PART I INT. EDITH'S RESIDENCE - HENRY'S ROOM##

(January 28. It is Henry's birthday. Henry is sleeping. Edith is reading the local newspaper with the television on, seated on the 3-seater green lounge. Minutes later, Henry wakes up - stretches his arms and legs, and hears his grandmother's voice, and smiles. Henry stands up, and makes his way to the lounge room - Edith notices him)

EDITH
 (smiles) Happy Birthday Henry.

HENRY
 (smiles) Thank you Grandma.

EDITH
 (smiles) Goodness. Time goes so fast. I remember the day you were born. Now you're an adult.

HENRY
 (smiles) Yeah.

EDITH
 (smiles) So on the agenda today. We've got lots on the agenda today. Picnic at Taylor River-

HENRY
 (smiles) I'd just like to spend the day with you. Time with you. That will make me very happy.

EDITH
 (smiles) Well we will just do that. Let me show you something-

(Henry smiles, and watches his grandmother stand up and make her way to the kitchen. Henry sits down on the 3-seater lounge, to the exact spot where Edith was seated. Edith makes her way to the kitchen - opens the fridge, and pulls out the **strawberry-vanilla cake**, handles it, makes her way toward Henry. Edith showcases the cake to Henry. Henry is elated as he sees the cake)

HENRY

(excited) OH YUM. That cake looks so YUM.
Can I eat it?

EDITH

(smiles) Later Henry. I want you to have a big protein-breakfast first. A big protein-filled omelette. To keep you strong.

HENRY

(chuckles) Yes. So I can continue protecting you-

EDITH

(smiles) Come on up. Up at the table-

(Minutes later, Henry is seated at the dining table. Edith serves Henry his protein-filled omelette on a purple plate. Henry sees the omelette, and licks his tongue in delight. Edith sits beside Henry with her serving of porridge. Minutes later, Henry begins eating his omelette)

HENRY

(eating) SO GOOD GRANDMA. So DAMN GOOD-

EDITH

(smiles) I'm glad you like it Henry. That makes me happy. But I will no way become a great cook like your mother was.

HENRY

(smiles) I miss her Grandma.

EDITH

(smiles) I miss her too. But I see so much of her in you. You look just like her. It feels like I'm talking to her sometimes.

HENRY

(smiles) Really.

EDITH
(smiles) Yeah it does.

(Fred enters the house, and unlocks the door. Fred notices Edith and Henry at the dining room table, enjoying their breakfast)

FRED
(to Henry) Happy Birthday Henry.

HENRY
(smiles) Thank you Fred. I appreciate it.

FRED
(to Henry) I'm sure your grandmother has the day planned for you.

EDITH
(smiles) Oh yes I do. We're all going on a picnic.

FRED
(smiles) Righto. That'll be nice. It will be great to take a day off work. So hectic and busy sometimes.

EDITH
(to Edith) I can only imagine. I've got sandwiches I've made, and a bit of dip. Let's all go now-

INT. TAYLOR RIVER

(Henry is swimming laps along Taylor River. The picnic blanket has been laid out - Edith and Fred are both eating their ham sandwiches together, and are talking amongst each other)

FRED
(to Edith) I can tell that swimming in the river has a calming effect on Henry-

EDITH
(to Fred) Yeah I'm sure it does. We all have our relaxation techniques for when we feel stressed.

FRED
(chuckles) Yeah and with me. It's cricket. Relaxing and fun to watch.

EDITH
(smiles) I bet it is-

(Henry finishes swimming his laps along Taylor River. He hops out of the river; completely drenched; and makes his way toward his grandmother. Henry looks at his grandmother, and smiles)

FRED

(confused) Why are you staring at your grandma for?

EDITH

(worried) You're all good Henry-

HENRY

(smiles, to Edith) Yeah. You just make me happy. I like looking at you. Especially when I'm stressed. I feel better-

EDITH

(smiles) Well that's good Henry. That makes me happy. Thank you-

FRED

(chuckles) That's what makes her a good counsellor.

HENRY

(chuckles) Yeah. That's right.

EDITH

(smiles) Come on Henry. Have some of these sandwiches. They're absolute-

FRED

(interrupts) DELISH!

EDITH

(chuckles) Yes. That's right.

(Henry sits down on the picnic blanket, and begins eating his serving of ham sandwiches. Henry smiles at his grandmother whilst eating, amused by her presence)

EDITH

(smiles) That's what I like to see Henry. You being happy. That makes me happy to see that-

HENRY

(eating) You make me happy Grandma. You always make me happy-

EDITH

(smiles) Thank you-

(In the meantime - four young men begin to chokehold Edith. Edith screams in shock. An angered Henry screams in anger, and attacks the young men - pushing one to the tree, pushing one down to the ground with his hands, and grabs the other's face and presses hard on it. Another steals Edith's purse, Henry notices - and engulfs his hand in flames, and shoots fire at the escapee's leg. The escapee screams. Henry runs to the escapee with his inflamed hand, and glares at the escapee in anger)

ESCAPEE
(in agony) YOU FREAK!!

HENRY
(angrily) DON'T TOUCH MY GRANDMA. YOU GOT IT. GOT IT. GOT IT-

(Henry punches the escapee repeatedly. The escapee panics)

ESCAPEE
(scared) Okay man. Okay. Sorry-

(Fred steps in - worried about if Henry will inflict more pain on the escapee)

FRED
(worried) Henry. Henry. No more. Let him go-

HENRY
(annoyed) FRED. He hurt Grandma. HE HURT GRANDMA. UNDERSTAND. I want to hurt him-

FRED
(to Edith) Edith-

EDITH
(coughs) It's okay Henry. It's okay. There's bullies everywhere you go... Just... Just stop for me please-

(Henry obeys his grandmother; and takes his hands off the escapee's face. The escapee is scared and runs away. The remaining of the gang is left injured, and unconscious)

HENRY
(annoyed) Why they do this? Why they do this to you Grandma?? It makes me angry. SO ANGRY-

EDITH
(worried) I know. I know-

(Edith coughs. Henry worries about Edith's injured neck)

HENRY
(worries) Grandma. Your neck... I HATE THEM-

EDITH
(worried) I know you do. But we don't want anymore trouble. It's best to not intervene, and ignore it. Understand-

HENRY
(understands) Yes Grandma. I understand-

EDITH
(worried) Let's go. Get your clothes and we will go to your mother's cafe for lunch.

HENRY
(obeys Edith) Okay Grandma.

INT. BETH'S DINER

(Beth's Diner - orange/white coloured interior/setting. Orange chairs surround the diner, with white blinds and ornaments for decoration. Henry is wearing a black tuxedo with a green tie, and smart black boots. Edith is wearing a green-checkered dress and green sandals. Fred is wearing a black tuxedo with a black tie, and black boots. The three are seated at the far-right side of the restaurant, with menus on hand)

EDITH
(smiles) What shall we order today??
Something light I reckon for lunch.

FRED
(looks at menu) I might have the good old' pasta carbonara. Get some carbs for the day-

EDITH
(chuckles) And I might just get some caesar salad with a side of chips. What about you Henry?

HENRY
(to Edith) I want something meaty-

EDITH

(smiles) What about some chicken casserole?
That would be nice.

HENRY

(smiles) Yum. And it comes with veggies.
Goodie-

FRED

(smiles) Righto. Time to order-

(Fred calls out the waitress. The
waitress attends Edith's table 7)

WAITRESS BELLA

(attends table 7) Yes hello you three. What
would you all like today? We've got our
dinner specials listed on our menu, in case
you guys are interested.

EDITH

(orders) Well I'd like a serving of caesar
salad with chips please-

FRED

(orders) I'd like the good old' pasta
carbonara you have on deck-

HENRY

(orders) And I'd like the beef casserole
please-

WAITRESS BELLA

(writes order) No worries. Shouldn't be too
long.

EDITH

(to waitress) So how's work today lovely?

WAITRESS BELLA

(to Edith) A bit busy. But it's good when
it's busy. Day goes fast.

(The waitress rips the order note
of her notepad. The waitress
notices Henry's resemblance to his
mother - her idol chef)

WAITRESS BELLA

(to Edith) Um Edith. Is that Beth's son?

EDITH

(to waitress) Yes it is. His name is Henry.

WAITRESS BELLA

(to Henry) Nice to meet you.

HENRY

(shy) Nice to meet you.

WAITRESS BELLA

(to Edith) He looks so much like her. My god. The resemblance is so real.

EDITH

(to waitress) That's what I always say. It is real. It's like I'm talking to her sometimes.

(Henry smiles at his grandmother)

WAITRESS BELLA

(to Edith) Beth was my idol chef. I used to follow her website when I was younger. Always check for her latest recipes. My favourite was her pesto-cream pasta. Delish-

EDITH

(to waitress) Yes. Beth did make a lot of nice meals.

WAITRESS BELLA

(to Edith) I know you both miss her because she's your family. I miss her as my idol. I'm sorry for your loss-

EDITH

(to waitress) Thanks for your sympathy. I really do appreciate it. Thanks.

WAITRESS BELLA

(to all) Enjoy your meals guys.

(Waitress Bella returns to work. Minutes later - meals are served. Henry eats like an animal, ripping the beef with his teeth. Fred is embarrassed)

FRED

(embarrassed) Seriously Henry. Do you have to eat like a barbarian or a lion? Please. We're not cavemen-

(Henry is embarrassed of his eating habits, and stops eating)

EDITH

(annoyed) FRED-

FRED

(embarrassed) Sorry. I just find it embarrassing.

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. Try eating with your knife and fork please. You can eat the way you want at home. Just not in public. Understand-

HENRY
 (to Edith) Yes Grandma. I understand.

(The three continue eating their meals)

 INT. EDITH'S RESIDENCE

(Henry and Edith sit beside each other on the green 3-seater lounge. Fred sits on a green recliner - opposite the 3-seater green lounge)

EDITH
 (to Henry & Fred) Now how was that dinner tonight you two.

FRED
 (to Edith) Oh delicious. So good.

HENRY
 (to Edith) So good Grandma. Thank you.

FRED
 (to Edith) Yeah thanks Edith. And Happy Birthday Henry again.

HENRY
 (to Fred) Thanks Fred.

FRED
 (to Edith) Alright. Well I'm heading off. I've been called in for the night-shift tonight.

EDITH
 (to Fred) More money at nighttimes.

FRED
 (to Edith) Yeah I know. But still. I prefer mornings than nights. Have a good rest of the day. I'm off.

EDITH
 (to Fred) See ya.

HENRY
 (to Fred) Bye.

(Fred leaves the scene. Minutes later - Edith and Henry watch a comical TV show, whilst talking to each other. Edith begins coughing - her neck is still sore from being on a chokehold. Henry worries)

HENRY
(to Edith) Grandma. Your neck. I'm worried.

EDITH
(coughs) I should be fine Henry. I should be fine. I will be fine.

HENRY
(worried) Are you sure Grandma? Are you really sure??

EDITH
(breathes) I'm sure. Let's have that slice of cake.

(After the two both have a slice of the strawberry-vanilla cake, Edith begins to feel sleepy)

EDITH
(sleepy) Sorry Henry. I might have to head to bed. I'm getting sleepy.

HENRY
(worried) Okay Grandma. Rest and have a good sleep. That's all I want-

EDITH
(sleepy) Will do Henry. And I hope you had a good birthday today Henry other than that incident at the river.

HENRY
(worried) Grandma. I did have a good day. I'm just worried about you. Please have a good sleep.

EDITH
(sleepy) I will. Goodnight Henry. I love you.

HENRY
(worried) I love you to Grandma. Good night.

(Minutes later, Edith and Henry are both sound asleep in their respected beds)

INT. EDITH'S RESIDENCE - DINING ROOM

(It is the next day. Edith, Fred and Henry are having breakfast at the dining table. They talk amongst themselves)

FRED

(to Henry & Edith) Well it's a bright sunny day today.

EDITH

(to Fred) Yeah it sure is. Nice day for a potato and chive salad. (recalls) In fact-

HENRY

(to Edith) Grandma. What is it?

EDITH

(to Henry & Fred) The chives. I didn't fetch them from the garden. Oh no-

FRED

(to Edith) You can just substitute the chives for something else-

EDITH

(to Fred) Yeah. Like Italian Herbs or something. Beth's favourite herb, believe it or not.

FRED

(to Edith) Yeah I don't mind them either. Beth & I had very common taste buds I guess.

EDITH

(chuckles) Yeah it seems that way. But I would much prefer chives. This recipe is perfect with chives.

FRED

(to Edith) Alright then. I'll get them. Do what you women do best and cook. I'll fetch the chives from the garden.

EDITH

(to Fred) Oh thanks Fred.

(Fred makes his way out to the garden. Henry finishes his protein-filled omelette, and burps. Henry chuckles)

EDITH

(chuckles) Well aren't you a grub Henry-

HENRY

(chuckles) I sure am Grandma. I sure am-

INT. EDITH'S RESIDENCE - OUTDOOR GARDEN

(Fred is out the backyard garden, searching for the chive plant.)

He picks out chives one by one, collecting up to a bunch of chives. Meanwhile, a dwarf man named Bobby steps hard on Fred's foot. Fred groans in pain, Bobby knocks Fred out with a punch to the jaw. Fred falls face-down on the floor, unconscious, the chive plants scattered. Vince, Henry's evil, psychotic, millionaire, intelligent, chemical engineer father, enters the scene. Vince, a fat, chubby man wearing a black shirt, black jeans, and black sandals - wishes to use his son Henry for evil and destruction with his son's powerful abilities. Vince pulls out his invention of a needle from his pocket - designed to attack the nerves of the nervous system - and plans to use it against Henry)

VINCE

(to Bobby) Bobby. Quiet. My son is here somewhere.

BOBBY

(to Vince) So he's a fire dude is he? He can make fire-

VINCE

(to Bobby) Yes. My son is a very powerful person. He just doesn't show it. He hides it. Because of his stupid family... That's why I killed his stupid mother.

BOBBY

(to Vince) But Vince... ah. I don't mean to sound negative. But fire is dangerous. I mean that means your son could kill you, me. Is that what you want??

VINCE

(to Bobby) Are you stupid?? NO. I just want him to unleash it. Be himself. He just suppresses it all the time. What's the point being born with that if you don't use it? I'll make him use it-

BOBBY

(to Vince) Okay. Righto. Just be careful. I don't want him to hurt me.

VINCE

(to Bobby) Toughen up little man. Here's a stun gun.

BOBBY
(confused) But what's it for?? What do I?

VINCE
(to Bobby) In case he tries to hurt you.

BOBBY
(obeys Vince) Righto Vince. You're the man-

(Vince pulls out a sniper gun, and inserts his bullet-like needle inside the gun, and aims at Henry's neck. Vince witnesses his son talking amongst his grandmother, and snarls in disbelief. Vince unleashes the trigger and shoots at Henry's neck. The needle sticks out in Henry's neck, Henry groans in agony. Edith turns her back, and notices the needle sticking out of Henry's neck)

EDITH
(frantic) Henry. Henry. Oh my Goodness-

HENRY
(groans) My neck-

EDITH
(frantic) Let me get it out. Let me get it out-

(Edith removes the needle from Henry's neck. Henry screams in agony. The needle unleashes its effects inside Henry's body, Henry's stomach begins to growl in pain. Henry holds his stomach and groans)

EDITH
(panicking) Henry. Henry.

HENRY
(panicking) Grandma. Let me protect you. Let me-

(Edith notices Henry igniting in flames. His chest, arms and hands engulf in RED flames. Henry notices and panics)

HENRY
(screams) NO. NO. NO. NO-

(In agony, Henry holds his stomach and screams in fear of himself. Henry looks fearful at Edith)

HENRY

(cries) Grandma. Get to safety. Quick. Quick. Quick-

EDITH

(worried) Henry. No. No. Teamwork. We work in a team. We will stop this together-

HENRY

(cries) Okay. Okay. O--

(Flames from Henry's stomach engulfs to the wall. The wall burns in flames. Henry screams in fear of himself)

HENRY

(screams) Grandma. Go. Get to safety. Get to safety.

EDITH

(worried) No Henry. We will stop this together. You've got to believe. Believe--

HENRY

(cries) Grandma. My body is on fire. It's not safe. I'm scared. I'm scared. I. My belly-

(Flames from Henry's stomach engulfs towards Edith. Edith steps out of the way - the flames hit another wall. The house bursts in flames. Henry screams in fear)

HENRY

(cries) I can't stop it. I can't stop it. I CAN'T-

(Henry screams. Edith cries to see Henry in fear and pain, knowing she can't do anything to help him without getting burnt alive. Fred wakes up from being knocked out, and sees the house ablaze from outside. Fred realises Henry has lost control, and seeks to save Edith)

EDITH

(worried) Henry. Don't give up. Try. Try--

HENRY

(screams) My stomach hurts. Everything hurts. My chest-

(Henry bends down in flames, and holds his inflamed chest.

Flames from Henry's back hits the walls beside him, collapsing the whole ceiling. Henry screams in fear, Edith becomes trapped. Fred arrives inside the ablaze house)

FRED
(shouting) Edith.

EDITH
(frightened) I'm trapped. My foot is stuck. The bricks. They're too heavy for me to lift.

(Fred notices an ablaze Henry, crying and screaming in fear. An upset Henry looks at Edith; concerned that he has accidentally trapped her in his house fire)

HENRY
(crying) Save her. Save Grandma-

(Fred lifts the bricks off of Edith's foot, and helps her evacuate outside. Henry loses full control, and screams - demolishing the house into flames completely. Henry collapses. Ash flows upwards from the ablaze house, Fred successfully evacuates Edith out completely. Edith cries, and worries about Henry. Vince looks in amazement, and escapes with Bobby in his red Ferrari)

EDITH
(shocked) Oh my Goodness-

FRED
(shocked) Henry is very powerful. I feared this day would come-

EDITH
(worried) Where is Henry? Where is he?

FRED
(worried) Be careful Edith. He's probably still inflamed. Dangerous. Take care-

(Edith moves forward to the now demolished house. She notices an unconscious Henry laying on his stomach on the ground, no longer inflamed)

EDITH
(calls Fred) FRED. He's here.

(Fred moves toward Edith's location. He notices an unconscious and injured Henry. Edith fears her grandson may be dead)

EDITH
(fears) Is he alive? Is he?

(Fred kneels down, and feels Henry's heartbeat by the chest)

FRED
(worries) He's alive. His heart is still beating.

EDITH
(worried) He's unconscious. Why is he when his heart's still bleeding??

FRED
(to Edith) Anaphylactic shock.

EDITH
(confused) What?

FRED
(to Edith) He would've collapsed due to shock. He's going to be alright. I've just got to do a few tests. We've got to go to my place.

INT. FRED'S RESIDENCE - TELEVISION ROOM

(Henry is laying unconscious on Fred's blue 2-seater lounge. Henry's neck is punctured with a needle-wound, Fred attempts to do a blood test but fails - no blood is being extracted from Henry's system. Edith stands beside Henry, holding his hand tightly)

FRED
(shocked) Edith. Um.

EDITH
(worried) Yeah. Whdat is it?

FRED
(shocked) Has uh? Has Henry ever bled in his life? I mean...

EDITH
(annoyed) Why?

FRED

(worried) I know it's a weird question. But for some reason - I can't extract blood from his system. I can't figure out what went wrong without a blood test. He mustn't bleed. But if that's the case, how is he alive and breathing. Without blood, the heart won't survive. I don't know how he's living without his body transmitting blood-

EDITH

(worried) Maybe try again. Let me see-

(Fred attempts to perform another blood test on Henry. It fails again - however a small red flame from Henry's veins comes out instead. The flames burn the tubes immediately, Fred drops the needle after feeling the intense heat from the small red flame. This breaks the needle's tubes, Fred is shocked)

FRED

(shocked) Oh my God-

EDITH

(annoyed) Goodness. Don't use God's name in vein please.

FRED

(shocked) Sorry. I-

(Fred grabs a matchstick, and performs another blood test on Henry. Another red flame spites up from Henry's veins - Fred quickly lights the matchstick with Henry's flame and puts it on his bunsen burner. Fred watches the red flame burn; and analyses its specs. Henry wakes up, feeling Edith's hand on his, and grabs it forcefully - breathing heavily. Edith groans)

EDITH

(groans) Henry. My hand. My hand-

(Fred turns his back, and notices an awoken Henry grabbing his grandmother's hand by force. Fred yells at Henry)

FRED

(angrily) Henry. WAKE UP TO YOURSELF. You're hurting your grandma-

(Henry fully awakens, listens to Fred's word, and realises what he's doing. Fred focuses back on the bunsen burner. Henry panics, and takes his hand away from her in lighting speed)

HENRY
(panics) WHAT AM I DOING? WHAT DID I JUST DO? WHAT DID I??

EDITH
(worried) Henry. Henry. Look at me. Look at me. It's okay. It's okay.

(Henry sits up on the lounge, and is ashamed by what he just did to his grandmother. Edith sits beside Henry on the blue 2-seater lounge)

HENRY
(ashamed) I'm sorry. So sorry Grandma. I'm so sorry. I'm so sorry. I'm so sorry-

EDITH
(reassures Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay.

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly. Edith feels the warmth of Henry's body temperature - warming her up from the nightly cool air)

HENRY
(cries) I'm sorry Grandma. I'm sorry. I'm-

EDITH
(comforts Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay. You don't need to apologise anymore. Relax-

HENRY
(hugs Edith) I. I. I. I-

EDITH
(comforts Henry) I. What??

HENRY
(cries) The house. My ability. I lost control. The house is gone. It's gone. We don't have a home. BECAUSE OF ME. BECAUSE OF ME-

EDITH
(worried) No Henry. It wasn't your fault. Someone shot a needle into you, and we're going to figure out what happened-

HENRY
(cries) Where are we going to live??

FRED

(worried) You both can live here until you get another house.

EDITH

(worried) You sure Fred.

FRED

(reassures) Sure. It's all I can do for who once was a close friend of mine.

EDITH

(smiles) She would thank you if she was here. Thank you.

HENRY

(to Fred) Thank you. For saving Grandma from me. And for Grandma staying here-

EDITH

(worried) You're staying here to Henry.

HENRY

(worried) I don't want to be inside anymore. I burn things inside. At least if I'm outside and I lose control, I won't hurt you both or the house. I'll stay outside-

EDITH

(determined) No you're not Henry. You be a part of the family. You're not a dog. You're staying inside.

HENRY

(cries) But Grandma. I-

EDITH

(determined) I don't care. NO. You be a part of the family-

(Henry is touched by his grandmother's words, and the encouraged inclusion, despite the fiery incident hours ago)

HENRY

(hugs Edith) I love you Grandma. I love you-

EDITH

(loving) I love you too. And I'm always here for you.

(Henry continues hugging his grandmother tightly)

EDITH

(determined) It's okay. We both will find out what happened-

(Henry cries in loving of his grandmother. Edith comforts Henry)

INT. FRED'S RESIDENCE

(It is a Sunday - the next morning. Edith prepares to go to church, prepping meals in the kitchen; whilst Henry is still sleeping. Minutes later, Henry wakes up and makes his way to the kitchen. Edith notices Henry)

EDITH

(smiles) Good morning Mr. Henry.

HENRY

(smiles) Good morning Grandma.

(Henry immediately hugs his grandmother. Edith smiles, Henry stops hugging his grandmother)

EDITH

(smiles) You love your everyday morning hugs, don't you?

HENRY

(smiles) Yes I do.

EDITH

(to Henry) It's Church today. Hurry up and get changed. We're running a bit late. Don't want to upset the pastor now, do we??

HENRY

(smiles) No we don't.

(Minutes later, Henry gets changed into casual clothes - green-checked shirt, black shorts, and joggers with no socks. Edith is wearing a pink blouse with black jeans, with pink sandals. Edith notices Henry isn't wearing any socks)

EDITH

(questions) Henry. Where are your socks?

HENRY

(to Edith) Oh in my clothes basket. I've run out of clean socks.

EDITH

(shocked) Really. Well we ought to buy you some new socks.

Made in Highland

 INT. TAYLOR UNITING CHURCH

(Henry & Edith arrive at Taylor Uniting Church. Henry & Edith sit in the middle row of the attendee seats. The pastor begins to speak)

PASTOR JACKSON

Good morning everyone. All attendees. Ladies and gentlemen. Welcome to Taylor Uniting Church. As each of my sermons goes every Saturday - we look at each quote from the bible and analyse what this quote means to us, and to God's spirits. I shall begin.

(The pastor pulls out his bible, and reads a quote from the bible. All attendees, including Henry & Edith, pull out their respected bibles and wait for the announced page turn)

PASTOR JACKSON

(to attendees) Mark 9:23 everyone In your bibles.

(All attendees flick their bibles to the page of Mark 9:23)

PASTOR JACKSON

(reads) "Jesus said to him, 'If you can believe? All things are possible for one who believes.'" Now what does that mean to us and the spirit of God.

(A moment of silence is heard at the church, whilst attendees analyse the quote from the bible - and what it means in everyday life)

PASTOR JACKSON

(to attendees) To me. This means that everyone. You, me. Everyone at this church. Everyone in the world. If you believe in doing anything in your life, you can achieve anything in your life. As Jesus once said. So don't give up so easily. If you're struggling with something, such as accomplishing a task, or learning a new skill, and you're struggling - believe and you can achieve. It's as simple as that.

EDITH

(whispers to Henry) See Henry. If you believe that you control your abilities, you can do it.

Made in Highland

HENRY

(whispers to Edith) With your help, I can.

(Edith smiles at Henry. Edith & Henry forward their attention back to the sermon of the pastor)

PASTOR JACKSON

(to attendees) Every bible quote I read to you every Sunday - compare it to your life. And understand that the spirit of God can help you get anywhere in life... and don't give up.

(The pastor and all attendees closes their respected bibles)

PASTOR JACKSON

(to attendees) Now. It's that time of every month, a monthly communion is to be held. To remember the 'Lord's Supper.'

(Little glasses of red wine and small pieces of bread; wheel down on a table to each attendee)

PASTOR JACKSON

(to attendees) Remember. The blood represents the blood of Jesus. And the bread represents the body of Jesus. The man who died on the cross to save our sins.

(Each attendee, including Henry & Edith, grab their serving of red cordial, and a small piece of bread. All attendees turn their attention back to the pastor)

PASTOR JACKSON

(to attendees) Now on my count. With this bread, we shall remember the body of Jesus Christ, who died on the cross to save our sins. 1. 2. 3.

(Henry, Edith; and all attendees eat their serving of the small piece of bread; remembering their saviour Jesus Christ)

PASTOR JACKSON

(to attendees) On my count again. With this drink, we shall remember the blood of Jesus Christ; who died on the cross to save our sins. 1. 2. 3.

(Henry, Edith; and all attendees drink their serving of red wine; remembering their saviour Jesus Christ)

PASTOR JACKSON
(to attendees) Now we shall pray.

(The pastor and all attendees bow
their heads to pray)

PASTOR JACKSON
(praying) Lord Heaven Father. With We thank
you for our nightly supper, and with this
monthly communion - we recognise and
remember the spirit of Jesus Christ. And how
he sacrificed his life to save our sins. We
pray all these things in your name. Amen.

(All attendees, including Henry &
Edith, say "Amen")

PASTOR JACKSON
(praying) Thank you all. This concludes our
service. Remember, believe through Jesus
Christ, and you can achieve anything. Thank
you.

(The church service ends. Henry
looks at Edith. Suddenly, a couple
of policemen walk through the
church. Unknowingly to Edith &
Henry - they are searching for
Henry due to the fiery accident
the day before. A concerned Henry
looks at his grandmother)

HENRY
(worried) Grandma. The cops. What are they?

EDITH
(concerned) Oh no.

(A concerned Pastor Jackson,
fronts the policemen and asks if
they need assistance)

PASTOR JACKSON
(to policemen) Yes hello there. I'm the
pastor at Taylor Uniting Church. Can I
assist you with anything? What's the issue?

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Pastor Jackson) Hello sir. We are
looking for a young man. Looks a bit like
this. Responsible for burning down a home
yesterday. We're investigating the
situation.

(Police Officer 1 shows Pastor
Jackson, a portrait of an
inflamed, shirtless Henry.

Pastor Jackson is shocked; learning of Henry's powerful ability. Pastor Jackson now views Henry as the devil's son, and is concerned of his safety)

PASTOR JACKSON

(shocked) What the? He. He goes to my church.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Pastor Jackson) Calm down sir. Do you know if this man is here now?

PASTOR JACKSON

(scared) I. I. I don't know. If he is, get him out of here. He. He's not God's son. He's. Get him out. I can't look. I can't--

POLICE OFFICER 2

(to Pastor Jackson) Do you know this man well? Did you know if he--

PASTOR JACKSON

(scared) I did know him on a friendly level. Had no idea. He had such potential. Such. Deadly. I don't know what it is. The devil if you tell me. He means nothing to me anymore. I... I can't do this anymore-

(Henry & Edith realise the police are after him. Henry looks panicky at Edith)

HENRY

(panicking) Grandma. They're. The pastor knows. Oh no-

EDITH

(worried) Henry. Relax. Relax. Listen to me.

HENRY

(panicking) They're after me. They're after me. No. No. We have to go. We have to go-

EDITH

(breathes) Okay. Be as silent as you can be. Don't panic. We will get through this-

HENRY

(scared) Okay. Okay. Let's go-

(Henry holds his grandmother's hand, as they exit the emergency room door quietly. Police Officer 1 identifies Henry and his grandmother exiting out the door suddenly; finding it suspicious.)

Police Officer 1 follows after Henry, and closes the door behind him. Police Officer 1 walks inside the emergency evacuation room, and identifies Henry, and pulls out his gun)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(aims gun at Henry) HEY. STOP.

EDITH
(to Policeman 1) Please. Policeman. Let me explain-

(Henry panics and looks at his grandmother. Henry turns around and looks at Police Officer 1. Edith remains calm and tries to handle the situation.)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(aims gun at Henry) STAY RIGHT THERE-

EDITH
(to Policeman 1) Okay. We shall stay here. We won't move.

(Henry obeys Police Officer 1, and starts to sweat due to stress. Pastor Jackson enters the emergency evacuation area, and identifies Henry. Pastor Jackson despises Henry, for his dangerous ability and power)

PASTOR JACKSON
(unhappy) HENRY. Get the hell out of here.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Pastor Jackson) Sir. This is police business. Please do not interfere with police business. He's wanted for questioning. Let it be.

PASTOR JACKSON
(unhappy) I will go. It's just that-

(Police Officer 2 pulls Pastor Jackson out. Before Pastor Jackson is pulled back inside, Pastor Jackson makes slurs at Henry)

PASTOR JACKSON
(slurs to Henry) YOU DAMN DEVIL. STAY THE HELL OUT OF MY CHURCH. DON'T YOU EVER COME HERE AGAIN. SON OF SATAN.

(These slurs upset Henry.)

Pastor Jackson has been escorted out of the room by Police Officer 2. Police Officer 1 puts his gun down, and draws his attention to Henry)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Sir Henry. You are wanted for questioning. You must comply, or we're taking your grandmother away from you. Understand.

(Henry is frightened of the idea, of his grandmother being taken away from him; and chooses to comply. Henry looks at his grandmother, and remains calm)

HENRY

(to Policeman 1) I will comply.

EDITH

(to Policeman 1) Could I say anything?

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) No. I'm talking to and questioning the fugitive only. No interruptions please.

(Edith obeys Police Officer 1)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(shows Henry the portrait of himself) Please confirm that this is you.

(Henry looks at the portrait of his inflamed, shirtless self. Henry is anxious)

HENRY

(anxious) Yes. That's. That's me.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Do you consider yourself a threat to your community, including your family?

HENRY

(gulps) Yes.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Do you feel you need to be locked away to keep your family and your community safe?

HENRY

(saddened) Yes.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Did you burn this house down on 3 Short Street, Taylor? Who is it owned by?

HENRY

(saddened) Yes. It was an accident. It was owned by...

(Henry points at his grandmother)

HENRY

(saddened) My grandma-

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Obviously not a stove-fire or a fire lit by a matchstick. But by your own body. Is that right?

HENRY

(ashamed) Yes.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) Was this intentional? Was he trying to hurt you at all or no?

EDITH

(calm) No. He wasn't trying to hurt me. A needle struck into his neck before the incident happened. A family friend of mine, believes the needle attacked the nerves of his immune system - leading to the loss of control of his abilities.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) And who is this family friend?

EDITH

(calm) He's a general surgeon at Taylor General Hospital.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) I need some evidence of that. Medical evidence. Anyway. I. How is this even possible? You're his grandmother right?

EDITH

(calm) Yes.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) How is this possible? This is superhero ability sort of stuff. This isn't human. I'm sorry to say. Are you? Do you've got abilities like this or something?

EDITH

(chuckles) No. No I don't.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(confused) How is he? Like I said. This is fiction stuff. This isn't real. This is the stuff we see in movies. I mean. His parents. Are they? Do they have fire abilities or something?

EDITH

(to Policeman 1) No. It's just him-

POLICE OFFICER 1

(confused) I ain't convinced. Are you sure he's your grandson? Is he adopted out or something? How is he?

EDITH

(to Policeman 1) No I'm telling you the truth. He is my grandson. I watched my own daughter give birth to him.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) ... Alright. I'll let you off the hook this time. But the community really wants you locked up because of the incident. They see you as a threat.

HENRY

(to Policeman 1) My grandma is a counsellor. She helps me all the time to control my abilities.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Please learn to control it better. Because if not, we will have to lock you up. Bye to both of you.

HENRY & EDITH

(to Policeman) Bye.

INT. BETH'S DINER

(It is the next day, daytime. Henry, Edith & Fred have a lunch out at Beth's Diner. They are seated at the far-left of the restaurant, Table 7, overlooking a window)

FRED

(to Edith) Shall I order some drinks for us all?

EDITH

(to Fred) Yes please. We should all go up and get ourselves a drink. Let's all go.

FRED

(to Edith) Okay sure. No worries.

(Fred, Edith & Henry go up to the bar at Beth's Diner. The Bartender; a 40-year-old chubby man, approaches them and takes their order)

BARTENDER

(to all) Hello. What can I order for you all today.

FRED

(to Bartender) Hello there. I'd like a schooner of beer thanks. What about you Edith?

EDITH

(to Bartender) I'd like a glass of wine thanks. Sav Blanc.

BARTENDER

Yes sure. (to Henry) And you young man??

HENRY

(to Bartender) Oh nothing thanks. Nothing.

EDITH

(to Henry) You sure you don't want anything. Not even water Henry??

HENRY

(to Edith) No thanks Grandma.

EDITH

(to Henry) Okay. No worries then. (to Bartender) That would be it thanks. I'll cover it.

(The Bartender processes the transaction. Edith pays for the bill by card. Edith, the Bartender, and Fred have a casual chat. The transaction has been fully processed. Suddenly a long-bearded man notices Henry, and starts chatting with him. The long-bearded man named John, is actually a drug addict working with Vince, and plans to spike a glass of water to give to Henry)

JOHN

(to Henry) You know. You really should drink some fluid of some sort. Or you are going to get sick. You don't want that. Do you??

(Henry becomes socially anxious)

Made in Highland

HENRY

(to John) Who are you?

JOHN

(to Henry) Just a friend. A stranger who wants to help another stranger. Just looking out for you young man. You don't want to die of dehydration. That old lady of yours is right. You need to drink something.

(Henry turns his head away to Edith for one second. That one second, John spikes Henry's drink with a touch of the drug ICE. Henry returns his attention to John)

JOHN

(to Henry) Just looking out for ya. Have a glass.

(Waitresses deliver food to Table 7, where Henry, Edith & Fred are seated)

HENRY

(to John) Oh it's okay. I'd rather not.

JOHN

(to Henry) Crazy man. Don't you have someone you want to protect. If you get dehydrated and you collapse, then you can't protect that person. Can you??

(Henry is easily fooled, and doesn't realise he's being conned)

HENRY

(to Fred) I mean I do. My Grandma. Maybe. Maybe. I should drink a glass.

JOHN

(to Henry) Here. Have my glass.

(John pushes his glass of spiked water out to Henry's hand. Henry picks the glass up and consumes the liquid. Henry puts the empty glass down, and feels refreshed)

HENRY

(to John) Thank you.

(John leaves. Henry turns his attention back to Edith and Fred)

EDITH

(to Henry) Come on Henry. Back to the table.

(Edith, Henry & Fred return to the table. They sit down and identify their meals. Moments later, they begin eating their meals. Fred and Edith begin to drink their drinks. Suddenly, Henry feels sleepy and is falling asleep. Edith worries)

EDITH
(worried) Henry. Are you okay??

FRED
(to Henry) Henry. You all good?

(The effects of the spiked drink takes effect on Henry. Henry becomes aggravated easily; thus Henry becoming angry. Edith is shocked as this is not the usual Henry she knows)

HENRY
(frustrated) I'M FINE.

EDITH
(worried) I'm concerned Henry. Do you need something to drink? I'll go get some water for you.

HENRY
(frustrated) OKAY THEN. OKAY. I WILL GET WATER--

(Henry leaves in a storm. Edith is shocked and looks at Fred)

EDITH
(to Fred) That's odd. Henry's not like that usually.

FRED
(to Edith) He's probably like me. When I get really tired, I get shitty.

EDITH
(worried) Still. That's different.

FRED
(to Edith) He should be alright. Maybe a drink of water will do him well.

(Henry makes his way to the bar, and is walking but nearly slips on a patron's chair. The patron's baby begins to cry as it fears Henry tripping over near its mother again. Annoyed, the patron moves her chair away from Henry.)

Henry moves to the bar. John looks on from a far distance, and laughs. Henry returns to the bar and acknowledges the bartender)

HENRY

(slurs words) Bar-ten. Bar-ten-der. Drink.

BARTENDER

(shocked) What the? Are you alright young man? You were alright a second ago.

HENRY

(slurs words) Drink-Drink. Drinks. Drinks.

BARTENDER

(shocked) I'll give you some water. You look too out of it for some grog. Don't want to lose my licence.

(Henry drinks the glass of water. The effects of the drug takes more effect into Henry's body. Henry suddenly screams and jumps over the counter, attacking the bartender. The bartender appears frightened)

BARTENDER

(scared) WHAT THE HELL? WHAT THE HELL?

(Henry screams in anger as he grabs the mop from inside the bar kitchen and smacks the Bartender's arm with it. The Bartender groans. The patrons look in shock)

PATRON

(looks at Henry) Call the cops. Call the cops someone.

(A patron calls the cops. Edith and Fred look worried)

EDITH

(worried) What the? What's going on?

(The Bartender grabs the mop off of Henry's hand and tries to restrain Henry. Henry engulfs into flames; his chest, arms, and hands engulf into flames, burning off his shirt. All patrons of Beth's Diner scream of Henry's dangerous abilities. The Bartender appears shocked, and fears for his life.

Henry attacks the Bartender by pushing him down on the ground; then forcefully punching the Bartender in the face. The Bartender screams. Edith hears all the commotion, and makes her way to the situation. She sees her angry, shirtless grandson attacking the Bartender. Edith doesn't appear pleased)

EDITH
(shouting) HENRY. STOP. STOP NOW-

(Henry looks furiously at his grandmother, and jumps the counter towards her. The Bartender has an injured eye, and struggles to stand up)

EDITH
(shocked) Henry. What are you doing? You don't behave like this. Stop this.

(Henry ignores Edith, and breathes in anger; and grunts. Henry glares at Edith, and gets mad)

EDITH
(shocked) Henry. No. NO-

(Henry angrily pushes his grandmother down. Edith cries in pain, and is in fear of what her grandson may do to her. Fred grabs Henry's arms. Henry burns Fred by the arms. Fred screams. Henry returns his aggravated attention towards Edith)

EDITH
(cries) Henry. Stop. Stop. PLEASE--

(Henry ignites his hand in flames and burns Edith's arm, and screams in anger. Edith cries in agony. An injured Fred attempts to grab Henry again, but fails. Henry screams as he pulls Fred by the arm, and throws him to a patron's chair. Patrons of Beth's Diner continue to scream. Henry screams as he breaks his grandmother's leg. Edith screams in agony, and falls unconscious.

Fred makes his way back to Henry; completely injured; determined to save Edith - grabs Henry's arm, turns him to the side, and knocks him out with a punch to the forehead. Henry is unconscious. John, outside of Beth's Diner, overlooking the incident from the window, walks by and laughs off. Patrons are shocked of the incident. Police officers arrive and take an unconscious Henry to custody for lock-up. Patrons are shocked and disturbed by the incident. The Bartender fronts Fred)

BARTENDER

(to Fred) Oh my God. Are you alright.

(Fred groans with his burnt arms)

FRED

(to Bartender) God. That hurt. She's. She's far worse off. What about you?

BARTENDER

(to Fred) You're far worse off than me. What uh? What happened to him?

FRED

(to Bartender) I have no idea.

(An unconscious Henry is put into the police caddy, and driven to Taylor Police Station. Police Officer 1 approaches Fred.)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Fred) Hello Sir. You've been injured to?

FRED

(to Police Officer 1) Not as bad as her.

(Police Officer 1 notices a severely, injured, unconscious Edith. He is shocked)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(shocked) Oh my God. What the? He did this. That young man.

FRED

(to Police Officer 1) Yes. He did it.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(questions Fred) Are you that young man's father? What's his name?

FRED

(to Police Officer 1) His name is Henry. And no. I'm not his father. A family friend.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Fred) That family friend. I was speaking to her yesterday at her local church. And she was mentioning you. Another story... back to this situation. I hear you're a general surgeon at Taylor General Hospital. Am I right?

FRED

(to Police Officer 1) Yes. I'm going to take her up there. Get stuck into some work.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Fred) Righto. I'm sorry this happened. In the meantime, Henry will be locked-up at the station for 3 months. Obviously, for community safety reasons. Will she be alright with that?

FRED

(to Police Officer 1) Probably not. But it's not only for her safety. The safety of the community.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Fred) That's right. I'll take him up to lock-up now. I'll leave you with it, and get my fellow officers to assist with the community.

(Fred picks Edith up, and groans with his burnt arms. The Bartender offers a hand, and helps handle Edith to Fred's car. Fred opens the front passenger door, Bartender carefully seats Edith down)

FRED

(to Bartender) Thanks. I've got healing work to do. And with your eye, just put an ice pack on it. It'll heal up quick.

BARTENDER

(to Fred) Oh don't feel bad for me. You and that lady are more hurt than what I am. I'll be fine.

FRED

(to Bartender) I'm sorry for what's happened. What an absolute shock this is. Get uh. Get better. Rest up.

BARTENDER

(to Fred) Yeah I'm going to close up shop and process what has just happened. I don't think any customers want to come back too soon. I'm just gonna let the community recover.

FRED

(to Bartender) Sounds like a plan. Right. I'm off. See ya.

(Bartender leaves. Fred groans while he drives himself and an unconscious Edith to Taylor General Hospital)

 INT. TAYLOR GENERAL HOSPITAL

(Taylor General Hospital - checkered green/white interior. Nurses wearing green gowns, doctors and surgeons wearing white gowns. Fred is in a surgical room, operating on Edith's arm, prepping for healing. Fred successfully completes the surgical procedure for Edith's broken arm, and takes her to her recovery room. Fred then applies antiseptic cream to Edith's burnt arm-wound, and bandages her arm up. Fred groans in agony, and takes a rest, and sits on a chair beside Edith's hospital bed)

 INT. TAYLOR POLICE STATION

(Taylor Police Station - blue/white brick interior. Policemen and policewomen in blue walk past door-from-door every workday, after being assigned criminal investigations. Meanwhile, a shirtless Henry is locked up in a questioning room, wearing orange shorts, barefoot and handcuffed. Henry's eyes open, and realises he is chained up, and at a police station. Henry realises what has happened, and screams in sorrow. Police Officer 1 enters the room, and watches Henry cry in sorrow)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Henry) Mr. Henry James Lovell. Is that
your full name? Answer...

(Police Officer 1 records the
conversation for the record)

HENRY
(cries) Yes. I. I. I didn't mean it-

POLICE OFFICER 1
(annoyed) ANSWER ALL QUESTIONS.

HENRY
(cries) Okay. Okay.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Henry) Do you realise what you've done?

(Henry cries in sorrow, recalling
all the things he's done)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Henry) You're in lock-up for many
charges. Charge 1 - Danger to the community.
Charge 2 - Assault. Charge 3 - Attempted
Murder. Do you understand these charges?

HENRY
(cries) Yes.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Henry) As a result, I declare you a
danger to the community. And you are to be
locked-up for 3 months, until you can be a
safe civilian in the community. Understand-

HENRY
(cries) Yes. I. I. I-

POLICE OFFICER 1
(annoyed) WHAT IS IT?

HENRY
(cries) Is Grandma alright? Is she?

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Henry) She's in a really bad way. No
more talking. You need to process what has
happened.

(Henry puts his head down in
shame. Police Officer 2 grabs
Henry by the handcuffs, and walks
him to his cell)

INT. TAYLOR GENERAL HOSPITAL

(Hours later. Edith is recovering from her wounds. Fred watches over her, whilst seated on an ottoman beside her bed. Moments later, Edith wakes up)

EDITH
(coughs) Hello. Hello. I. I-

FRED
(worried) Relax Edith. Relax. It's me. Fred-

(Edith recalls everything that has happened. And the wounds her grandson gave her in an unexplained feat of rage)

EDITH
(concerned) Henry. Is he?

FRED
(to Edith) He's locked up.

EDITH
(Shocked) WHAT?

FRED
(to Edith) Edith. Do you remember what had happened?

EDITH
(to Fred) Yes. Yes I do. Henry. Henry got angry all of the sudden. That. That wasn't him. Something happened when we were at the bar. He was waiting for us-

FRED
(worried) Possibly. But it doesn't excuse what he did.

EDITH
(concerned) I need to see him. I need-

(Edith tries to move, but groans with her burnt arm. he struggles to move due to her broken leg)

FRED
(to Edith) Edith. You ain't going anywhere. You need to heal.

EDITH
(concerned) Well Fred. I need to talk to him over the phone or something. I want to find out what happened last night.

(Fred is annoyed, not wanting Edith to talk to her grandson after the wounds she had received from him. Fred stands up annoyed, and grabs the landline phone. Fred hands the landline phone to Edith, and returns to his seat on the ottoman beside Edith. Edith dials Henry's number)

INT. TAYLOR POLICE STATION

(Police Officer 1 is in his office, and notices Henry's confiscated phone is ringing. Police Officer 1 picks up Henry's phone and realises it is Edith, his grandmother. Police Officer 1 is shocked, and answers the phone)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Edith. Is that you?

EDITH

(worried) Hello my fellow officer. I. I uh. I know what happened last night to me. To the Diner. I'd like to speak to my grandson about what happened.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Look uh Edith. Henry's in lock-up. In a cell. Are you sure you want to talk to him?

EDITH

(worried) Is Henry alright?

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Oh he's fine. He's fine. He's just been crying. He's devastated by what has happened.

EDITH

(worried) I want to find out what happened. I'd like to talk to him on the phone if I could.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Okay. Fine. I'll get him on the phone. I'll just put you on hold... and only for 10 minutes. And he's back in his cell.

EDITH

(concerned) Okay. Okay-

(Police Officer 1 puts Edith on hold. Police Officer 1 heads to Henry's cell. A shirtless Henry sitting on his cell stool, looks up at Police Officer 1 - stunned by his sudden appearance behind his closed-up cell. Henry has been crying in sorrow, and is completely devastated)

HENRY

(devastated) What's going on? What's going?

(Police Officer 2 opens Henry's cell, and handcuffs him. Henry looks scared at Police Officer 1, and follows the lead of Police Officer 2. Both police officers arrive at the questioning room, with Police Officer 2 handcuffing Henry. Police Officer 1 closes the door of the questioning room)

POLICE OFFICER 2

(points at chair) Henry. Sit.

(An anxious Henry sits down on the chair at the questioning room. Henry gulps in fear)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Your grandmother wishes to talk to you. Strictly 10 minutes. Understand.

HENRY

(anxious) Yes.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) You're on a timer.

(Police Officer 1 hands Henry his mobile phone. Henry gulps, both Police Officer 1 & Police Officer 2 leave the room in silence. Henry looks at his phone, with his grandmother's contact number on it. Henry begins talking on the phone, and becomes upset)

HENRY

(upset) Hello.

(Police Officer 1 starts the 10 minute timer. Edith is shocked to hear her grandson's voice, the morning after she was brutally attacked by him)

EDITH
 (shocked) Henry. Hey... Hey. How are you?

(Henry gulps in sadness, as he hears his grandmother's voice. Henry cries in sorrow, knowing all the pain and wounds he had inflicted on his grandmother. Henry doesn't say a word, Edith hears Henry crying over the phone)

EDITH
 (concerned) Henry. Henry. We don't have much time. I want to talk to you.

HENRY
 (cries) I uh. I uh. I'm sorry. I'm sorry.

EDITH
 (concerned) It's okay Henry. I know that wasn't you last night. That's not my Henry. I know that wasn't you, and I'm going to find out what happened. Okay.

HENRY
 (cries) Okay. I. I'm sorry. I didn't mean it. I didn't mean-

(Police Officer 1 checks his timer. Henry has 5 minutes left of his phone call duration)

POLICE OFFICER 1
 (shouts to Henry) 5 Minutes. That's it-

(Henry nods his head at Police Officer 1, acknowledging he only has 5 minutes left of his short phone call with his grandmother. Henry remains silent, Edith worries)

EDITH
 (concerned) Henry. What. What's wrong?

HENRY
 (upset) I've. I've only got 5 minutes left. To. To uh. To talk to you.

EDITH
 (concerned) Oh. We've got to be quick.

HENRY
 (cries) I'm sorry Grandma. I'm sorry. I will never forgive myself for what I did to you. I will never forgive-

(5 minutes pass - Police Officer 2 enters the room. Henry panics, Police Officer 1 confiscates Henry's phone and hangs up)

POLICE OFFICER 2
(to Henry) STAND UP-

(Henry stands up in fear, and looks at Police Officer 1. Henry stands up, Police Officer 2 handcuffs Henry, and takes him back to his cell. Henry is confined in his cell, Police Officer 2 locks his cell up. Police Officer 2 turns the cell lights off, Henry cries in sadness. Police Officer 2 leaves. Moments later - Henry screams in heartbreak of himself. Henry loses his mind, and tries to destroy himself - banging his head on the cell bars, and the cell door, not wanting to live anymore. Henry screams in sorrow, and engulfs into flames - bangs his head on the cell door hard, collapses, and ends up with a bruised eye and forehead)

INT. TAYLOR GENERAL HOSPITAL

(Edith looks at her phone in her wheelchair, and worries about Henry. Fred isn't pleased)

EDITH
(concerned) Poor Henry. I. I'm so concerned about him.

(Fred isn't empathetic towards Henry, after the fiery wounds he put on himself and Edith, as well as the Bartender, and the horror he inflicted on the customers at Beth's Diner)

FRED
(annoyed) Are you friggin kidding me Edith?

EDITH
(shocked) What?

FRED
(shocked) Of all the things he did this morning. You feel sorry for him.

(MORE)

FRED (CONT'D)

He needs to be in a cell. To think about what he just did. There's no way I'm empathetic towards him. Not after how he hurt me, you, the bartender. Or how he scared the shit out of everyone at the restaurant.

EDITH

(annoyed) Fred. We all make mistakes. I know that wasn't Henry. That wasn't my grandson. He would never do anything like that.

FRED

(annoyed) Well he did. And there's no way in hell I have compassion for him.

EDITH

(annoyed) Something must of happened when we were at the bar. He was waiting for us when we were at the bar.

FRED

(annoyed) Yeah. Like what??

EDITH

(worried) I don't know. I have to think about it.

FRED

(annoyed) See-

EDITH

(annoyed) Goodness Fred. You are ANNOYING ME-

FRED

(angrily) You're ANNOYING ME. YOU HAVE COMPASSION FOR THAT YOUNG MAN WHEN HE COULD HAVE KILLED YOU. HE WOULD HAVE IF I DIDN'T KNOCK HIM OUT-

EDITH

(angrily) GET AWAY FROM ME-

FRED

(angrily) I'D TELL HIM TO GET STUFFED IF I WAS YOU-

EDITH

(furious) FRED. HE. IS. MY. GRANDSON. HE MADE A BLOODY MISTAKE, ALRIGHT. SOMETHING HAPPENED TO HIM. AND I WILL. GET. TO. THE. BOTTOM. OF THIS. OKAY... NOW GET AWAY FROM ME-

(Fred is shocked by Edith's furiousness at him, and apologises)

Made in Highland

FRED

(apologetic) You're right. I'm. I'm sorry. I. I'm just hurt by what happened. That's all-

EDITH

(cries) Fred. You and I both wouldn't know what it's like to be Henry. He's had conversations with me in the past - saying he wish he didn't exist sometimes. Do you know how upset that makes me feel? No one should feel that way. No matter how different we are. No one should ever feel like they don't belong.

FRED

(apologetic) I know. I just. I guess. I guess I'm scared of him. That's all.

EDITH

(cries) That will make him feel worse Fred. Don't. Treat him like he's like everyone else.

FRED

(apologetic) Okay. I will. I will.

EDITH

(saddened) And I would be scared like him, if I had fire abilities. to. But that's just who he is. Accept him for who he is.

FRED

(apologetic) I will. I will.

EDITH

(saddened) I just hope he's not around bad criminals. That concerns me.

FRED

(worried) Nah. He'd probably have his own secluded cell. He'd pose a risk to the other inmates, if he were to 'flame out.'

EDITH

(chuckles) 'Flame out.' Really.

FRED

(to Edith) Well ah. You know. Lose control.

(Fred and Edith chuckle)

EDITH

(to Fred) Righto. I'm going to go see Henry tomorrow. Is there a wheelchair I can access from the hospital or something while my leg heals?

FRED

(to Edith) Yeah sure. I'll pick it up before you meet Henry. Around 8am I'll pick it up.

EDITH

(to Fred) Thanks Fred. I appreciate it.

(Fred smiles at Edith)

EDITH

(to Fred) I uh. I might head to bed. I am one tired old lady. I'm gonna sleep here, cause I'm too hurt to sleep elsewhere.

FRED

(to Fred) Yeah sleep there. Heal up. Goodnight.

EDITH

(to Fred) Goodnight.

(Fred turns the lights off and heads to bed. Edith falls asleep, and allows her body to recover from her wounds)

INT. TAYLOR POLICE STATION

(Henry wakes up from his cell, lying flat on his stomach, with a bruised eye and forehead. Henry turns to the side, places his hands on the ground floor, and stands himself up. Henry is still very upset, by all that's happened - and becomes depressed. Henry sits on his cell stool, and looks at his hands - afraid of himself. Moments later, Police Officer 1 stands in front of Henry's confined cell, and pulls out a blue shirt. Police Officer 1 opens the cell's doors, and hands the shirt to Henry)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Put it on.

(Henry puts the blue shirt on himself. Henry panics as he looks at Police Officer 1)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Questioning time. 30 minutes this time. Stand up-

(Henry stands up. Police Officer 1 handcuffs Henry, and takes him to the questioning room. Henry arrives in the questioning room, and notices his grandmother in a wheelchair sitting inside the room. Henry cries in shock, and devastation of his grandmother's mobility needs due to his fiery attack on her. Edith looks concerned for Henry)

EDITH

(worried) Henry. It's okay. It's okay.

(Henry panics as the police officers chain Henry's arms to the table, preventing any unintentional fiery accident or assault from Henry to his grandmother. Edith worries as she watches her grandson panicking as he is chained up. Henry's hands are chained to the table, and looks at his grandmother in worry. Police Officer 2 lines a restricted police line, dividing Henry away from his grandmother. Fred enters the room, notices Henry, and distrusts him. Fred stands up and watches Henry, whilst Police Officer 1 stands in the middle of the room - questioning the suspect and witnesses regarding the fiery attack at Beth's Diner. Police Officer 2 stands by Henry for security, with a stun gun in his hand)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) Righto. We shall start the questioning. But first, I'd allow a few greetings first.

EDITH

(worried) Hi Henry.

(Henry struggles to look at his disabled grandmother, noticing he is at fault for his grandmother's mobility needs. Henry is devastated)

HENRY

(devastated) Hello Grandma.

(Fred doesn't say a word to Henry, in distrust of him)

EDITH
(to Fred) Hello Henry.

FRED
(to Henry) Hello.

HENRY
(devastated) Hello Fred.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Edith & Fred) Now. We are here to discuss the fiery tirade that happened yesterday at noon. Henry is the suspect, and I'd like to talk to you witnesses. Understood.

EDITH & FRED
(obeys Police Officer 1) Yes.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Edith & Fred) As you can see - Henry is chained up. This is for the safety of you both, in case he explodes.

(Henry puts his head down in shame)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Edith) Now Edith. What do you recall about Henry's behaviour yesterday?

(Henry cries whilst looking at Edith. Edith notices and breathes)

EDITH
(confesses) What I remember was. We were at the restaurant. We got there, everything was okay. We were all happy. Then Fred and I ordered some drinks at the bar. Henry declined he didn't want any. Henry agreed he would wait for us by the bar. We returned to our seats. And uh. Henry became suddenly aggressive.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(questions Edith) He's never been aggressive in his life until now.

(Henry wishes to add input to the story his grandmother was saying)

HENRY
(cries) Can I say something?

POLICE OFFICER 1
(angrily) Henry. Shut up. I'm talking to the witnesses. You are the suspect. I'll get to you. WAIT-

(Henry gulps in sadness, and remains quiet. He continues looking at his grandmother)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Edith) Go on.

EDITH
(confesses) I was uh. Shocked that he became suddenly aggressive. I told Henry to maybe go get himself a drink of water. Because he didn't have anything to drink all morning. I thought the dehydration was getting to him. So I told him to get a drink. I uh. I'm not sure what happened after that.

(Henry cries while hearing his grandmother's confession relating to the incident)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(questions Edith) Anything else you remember. Or no??

EDITH
(confesses) I uh. Moments later, I heard all this commotion and screaming. And. I walked to where the commotion was. And I saw Henry inflamed, and attacking the Bartender.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(shocked) My GOD. Oh my GOD. (to Fred) And you sir. Would you like to add anything?

FRED
(to Police Officer 1) I must say. I was shocked when I saw Henry not only attacking the bartender, but was also on fire. I remember all customers at the restaurant were screaming. They were that terrified of Henry's ability.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Fred) I bet they would be. (to Edith & Fred) And please tell me what injuries you both have sustained from Henry's fiery attack on you both?

(Henry puts his head down in shame, and continues crying. Edith notices, and feels bad for her grandson)

FRED
(to Police Officer 1) Burnt arms. Both arms.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Edith) And you??

EDITH

(to Police Officer 1) I uh. One arm burnt.
And a broken leg as you can see.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) I can see. Right-

(Police Officer 1 adds notes
regarding Fred's and Edith's
statements on his notepad. Henry
looks anxious at his grandmother)

HENRY

(cries) Grandma. I'm. I'm sorry-

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. I know. I know. It's okay.

(Henry cries at his grandmother,
anxious about what is going to
happen. Police Officer 2 finishes
writing notes down on his notepad.
He looks at Henry)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Now Henry. Your statements.
Describe to me what happened in your point
of view. We all might learn something-

HENRY

(cries) Okay.

(Henry breathes, and talks in an
upset voice)

HENRY

(upset) I uh. I remember. When I was at the
bar waiting for my grandma and Fred. Some
random guy from the bar. Realised I declined
any water or drink at the bar. He was being
friendly, and told me I should drink fluid.
Or I will dehydrate. He asked me if I had
someone I wanted to protect. I said yes. My
grandma.

(Edith is touched to hear Henry's
statement, the knowledge of him
wanting to protect her at all
costs)

HENRY

(upset) The guy said. 'Well if you don't
drink, you will get dehydrated and
collapse.' He said to me 'if you collapse,
you won't be able to protect your grandma.'
I uh. I didn't want to collapse, and not
protect my grandma. So uh. I took his
advice. He gave me a drink of water. I uh. I
drunk it.

(Fred is shocked to hear how gullible Henry is; accepting a drink of water from a total stranger, without questioning it. Edith is shocked to hear Henry's confession to)

FRED
(annoyed) Here we go.

(Henry is offended by Fred's annoyed commentary. He looks at Police Officer 1 and confesses, whilst remaining upset)

HENRY
(cries) I drank it. Then suddenly, I felt strong. Very strong. And I got frustrated easily. I. I wanted. For some reason, I wanted to punch things. I got sleepy, and I started to get angry for no reason. I uh. I started to breathe heavy. And I. I lost it. And I regret it. I seriously regret it. I wish this never happened.

(Henry puts his head down in shame. Edith believes there is more to the story, and wishes to put more input into the story)

EDITH
(questions) Henry. Do you know if that guy put something in that drink he gave you before you drank it?

(Henry looks at his grandmother, and is shocked to hear the question. He believes it may be true)

HENRY
(upset) I. You might be right Grandma. You might be right. I just drank it. I thought he was being friendly.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Edith) Good thinking. Good investigating Ms. Edith. You should be a detective.

(Henry and Edith chuckle. Fred becomes frustrated with Henry's confession)

FRED
(annoyed to Henry) I mean how stupid are you Henry. HOW STUPID? Don't you ever question things? Or you just take it for granted?? Didn't you ever dare to THINK before you took that glass? Weren't you ever taught stranger-danger when you were younger??

(Henry is upset by Fred's frustration at him. Henry realises he was too gullible, and believed everything the stranger said to him - which ultimately resulted in him on a fiery tirade; severely hurting his grandmother, Fred, and the Bartender)

HENRY

(upset) You're right Fred. I didn't think. I didn't-

FRED

(frustrated) YOU COULD HAVE KILLED ME. THE BARTENDER. YOUR OWN GRANDMA. And all you can say is 'I didn't think?' Pathetic-

HENRY

(cries) NO. I-

FRED

(frustrated) Well it surely seems like you don't care that much-

HENRY

(cries) I do care. Grandma means everything to me. She means EVERYTHING.

FRED

(to Edith) Well it doesn't sound like it-

(Henry becomes frustrated and upset, and stands up. Henry becomes inflamed in anger, burning off his shirt in frustration - declaring his love and deep regret for what he did to his grandmother)

HENRY

(frustrated) MY GRANDMA MEANS EVERYTHING TO ME. IF I DID KILL HER, I WOULD WANT TO DIE. DIE. DIE... I WOULD WANT TO BE KILLED. I WOULD GIVE YOU A GUN TO SHOOT ME--

(Henry looks down at his bare-chest, and is embarrassed. Henry sits down, barechested, and puts his head down in shame, with his hands on his head. The teared remains of the blue shirt remains on the floor)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) I'll get him another shirt.

(Edith realises how much love and deep regret her grandson has for her. Edith looks at her deeply upset grandson, and worries)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith & Fred) Thanks for your time you both. I appreciate it. Because of Henry's fiery tirade - he is subjected to be locked up for 3-months. The community needs to recover. Henry needs to become a safe citizen again before he's released.

EDITH

(to Police Officer 1) Can I visit him now and again in those months?

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) Yes. Yes you can-

(Police Officer 2 unchains Henry, and hands Henry an orange shirt. Henry puts it on himself, and looks at his grandmother. Police Officer 2 chains Henry's arms back up)

EDITH

(to Police Officer 1) What times would be good??

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) Mondays, Tuesdays & Fridays. 9am-12pm. Those dates and times are only available.

EDITH

(to Police Officer 1) Okay. Those times will be it. Those times-

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith) And I will help uncover what had happened that night. I will need to ask Henry more questions about this unidentified man he encountered at the bar before the accident.

EDITH

(to Police Officer) Yes thank you. And I will help uncover it to.

(Police Officer 2 instructs Henry to stand up. Henry stands up, Police Officer 2 handcuffs Henry. Edith notices Henry being walked back to his confined cell. Edith worries about Henry)

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. Look at me. Look at me-

(An upset Henry looks at his grandmother)

EDITH

(to Henry) I love you Henry. So much. So damn much. Never forget it, okay.

(Henry nods his head)

HENRY

(cries) I love you to Grandma. I love you. I'm sorry. Me sorry.

EDITH

(to Henry) It's okay. It's okay. I love you-

HENRY

(cries) I love you to-

(Police Officer 2 moves Henry back to his cell. Police Officer 2 locks Henry up)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Edith & Fred) It's time for both of you to go-

EDITH

(to Police Officer 1) Sure. Sure. We'll go. We'll go.

FRED

(to Police Officer 1) We're off.

(Moments later, Edith & Fred leave and make their way to Fred's residence. The next morning - Henry wakes up lying on the cell floor, and stretches his arms and legs. Henry stands up looks outside his confined cell, with his hands holding the bars. Henry cries as he murmurs 'Grandma.' Police Officer 1 stands in front of Henry's cell)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) How was your sleep?

HENRY

(saddened) I miss Grandma. I miss Grandma.

(Police Officer 1 ignores Henry. Henry misses his grandma deeply)

Made in Highland

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Henry) It's time for a meaty brekky.

(Police Officer 1 slides a paper plate down, full of a massive steak. Henry bends down, grabs it, and stands back up. Henry begins eating his steak, ripping it to bits with his teeth. Police Officer 1 looks at Henry's animalistic eating, and keeps his distance from the cell. Henry finishes eating the steak, and burps. He bends down, and slides the empty paper plate underneath his cell)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(chuckles) You enjoy it?

(Henry nods his head)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(chuckles) God. You eat like an animal. My GOD.

(Henry is embarrassed, and paces around his confined cell. Henry deeply misses his grandma. Police Officer 1 watches Henry pace around the cell)

POLICE OFFICER 1
(to Henry) Henry. We're going to have to do mental exercises of some sort, into controlling your abilities. If you do well, I will let you out earlier. The community doesn't want you out until you can prove yourself to be a safe citizen.

(Henry hears the eligibility criteria of his release - successful mental practices into controlling his abilities. Henry thinks of his grandma when he hears this)

HENRY
(saddened) Grandma. Grandma is a counsellor. She helps me. She's really good at helping me-

(Police Officer 1 hears Henry's plea for his grandma, to help with mental exercises into controlling his abilities)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Well she couldn't help you when you burned her and broke her leg. Could she?

(This saddens Henry, as he realises this is true)

HENRY

(cries) You. You have a stun gun right. Or a normal gun would be better-

(Police Officer 1 questions Henry's motives and questioning, into why he wants a real gun/stun gun)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(questions) Why?

HENRY

(cries) If anything happens, shoot me dead. I don't care. I will allow it. Shoot me dead. I don't want to hurt my grandma again--

(Police Officer 1 empathises with Henry, and straight out refuses like a father)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) No. No way. Henry. I'm not going to do that. Not ever. A stun gun maybe. Not a real gun. I'm not going to shoot you. You can be a great citizen again. We just got to help you control your abilities. And I'll let you out.

HENRY

(cries) Grandma. Grandma is the answer. Please... Have a stun gun on hand... please. Please... Stop me from hurting my grandma again...

POLICE OFFICER 1

(to Henry) Okay. Okay fine.

(Henry puts his hands on the cell bars, crying. Police Officer 1 pulls out his phone, and contacts Edith)

INT. FRED'S RESIDENCE - TELEVISION ROOM

(Edith's phone rings. She looks at her phone, and the phone number. Edith is unsure of the number, and answers the phone call)

Made in Highland

EDITH
(on phone) Hello.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(on phone) Edith. Would you like to attend by Henry today at the police station?

EDITH
(on phone) Yes sure.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(on phone) Look. I wanna release Henry. I want to. But... Henry needs to prove to me he can be a safe citizen in the community, and not pose any risk or harm to the community. I want this done by mental exercises of some sort, to help him take control of his abilities. I think you're a counsellor-

EDITH
(on phone) Yes I am. I have done mental exercises with him in the past. And I've been successful-

POLICE OFFICER 1
(on phone) Well you weren't when Henry hurt you that night-

(Edith hears this statement, and knows it is true. Determined to help her grandson, Edith wishes to help Henry control his abilities once and for all, and to let him out free)

EDITH
(on phone) Look Officer. Henry did hurt me bad that night. But I know that wasn't my grandson. Like Henry confessed yesterday, that mysterious unidentified man. I believe he spiked Henry's glass of water when he wasn't looking.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(on phone) I believe you are to be true.

EDITH
(on phone) Henry's a good grandson. He's good. It was just a bad accident that night. Something I'm trying to forget, and I want Henry to forget. So we can both move on.

POLICE OFFICER 1
(on phone) Edith. How can you convince to me he is controllable? From the incident at Beth's Diner - I'm not too sure.

EDITH

(on phone) Please Officer. You know, locking him up is only doing more harm than good. He will grow into severe depression. I don't want that for my grandson.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Edith. Your grandson is a threat to the community, and to yourself, and multiple other people. He has hurt a lot of people, emotionally and financially. What about the bartender he hurt? He wants Henry locked up.

EDITH

(on phone) Officer, please. How would you feel if you were Henry's father?

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Look Edith. He's not my son.

EDITH

(on phone) But what would you do?

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) I'd help him. Like any father would.

EDITH

(on phone) Please. This locking up thing. I know the community want it. But I, his grandmother - is deeply concerned for his mental wellbeing. This is not good, it will drive him to not want to live anymore. That frightens the hell out of me, as his grandmother. Please. Wouldn't you understand?

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Edith. It'll be a bit corrupt to Taylor Police, if I let some prisoner off the hook. Someone the community wants locked up, off the hook. It'll be a very corrupt thing to do. The people of Taylor will lose faith in us.

EDITH

(on phone) I know. I know. I know. You don't want that. You want the people to have trust in you. It's just.... I'm so concerned about him.

(Police Officer 1 thinks about Edith's views on her grandson, and as a father - and agrees to let Henry go - protecting Henry's mental wellbeing from insanity and severe depression)

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Fine. I'll let Henry go. But you MUST... and I mean you MUST... help control Henry's ability... Please. You must... I don't know. You're a counsellor. You must psychotically control him, his abilities I mean. You must find a way.

(Edith is relieved, and is determined to help her grandson gain full control of his ability)

EDITH

(on phone) I will.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) But then again. Making Henry a police officer may build Henry's trust back up in the community again. I can be his mentor. We can work together, and I can help control his abilities in the field. And to remain calm in very tense situations. (thinking) Yeah actually. That might be a good idea.

(Edith thinks about Police Officer 1's idea, and agrees)

EDITH

(on phone) Yeah actually. That ain't bad. I think I agree. It'll be good for Henry's self-esteem I believe to.

POLICE OFFICER 1

(on phone) Alright. I'll talk to the commissioner about this and get his approval. Righto. We might have a plan. This might work.

EDITH

(on phone) Thank you Officer. Thank you.

INT. TAYLOR POLICE STATION - HENRY'S OFFICE

(Police Officer 1 is now known as Inspector Smith Johnson)

(2 months later, Edith's broken legs and wounds from Henry's fiery attack at Beth's Diner - are finally recovered; thus no longer requiring wheelchair access. Edith is standing up; Henry has become a constable police officer under Inspector Smith Johnson's leadership. Henry gets ready for work, and is wearing his full police attire, including his police cap. Edith notices Henry's police attire, and is impressed.)

EDITH

(to Henry) Well look at you. Constable Henry Lovell.

(Henry chuckles at this, and worries about his first day on the job. Henry hugs his grandmother tightly, not wanting to let go)

HENRY

(hugging Edith) I'm so sorry Grandma.

(Edith is confused to why her grandson is apologising to her. Henry continues hugging his grandmother)

EDITH

(to Henry) For what Henry? For what?

HENRY

(cries) That incident. The incident at the restaurant still haunts me.

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. It's okay Henry. I know... I know it wasn't your fault. Never think it was your fault. We will find out what happened...

HENRY

(cries) I hope so. I hope so.

(Inspector Smith Johnson opens the door. Henry and Edith notice the Inspector)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) You all ready to go Constable.

HENRY

(worried) Yes Inspector.

(Edith smiles as she watches her grandson become a police officer)

Made in Highland

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(TO HENRY) RIGHTO. ANY QUESTIONS YOU'VE GOT?

(Henry wishes his grandmother to be by his side at all times, but understands it is not safe)

HENRY
(to Inspector) Grandma. My Grandma. Can-

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Henry) Not in the line of field Henry. It's too dangerous.

HENRY
(to Inspector) Fine. Um. Can she stay here? I want her to stay in this office.

(Inspector Smith Johnson corrects Henry, stating it is now his Constable office)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(corrects Henry) Your office.

HENRY
(to Inspector) I just want her to stay here. So I can see her on my breaks, and spend time with her when I'm not working.

(Edith is touched to hear Henry's wishes of his wanted time together with her)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Henry) Your office. Do what you want?

HENRY
(to Inspector) It's just that. Our house. The house--

(Henry reflects back on his grandmother's house, the house he accidentally burned down months ago. The house Edith & Henry lived in, before moving to Fred's residence. Henry gets upset, thinking back to what he's done. Edith realises Henry is getting upset)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) Henry. Don't think about it. Breathe for me. Breathe. Don't think about the past. Just. Just breathe-

(Henry breathes)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(chuckles to Edith) He needs a fireproof house. Does he?

HENRY
(embarrassed) Yes. Because I'm a freak alright.

(Edith realises Henry is getting embarrassed)

EDITH
(to Henry) Hey. Don't get embarrassed. I love you and your ability. I love you for who you are.

(Henry smiles as he looks at his grandmother. Edith notices Henry's smile)

EDITH
(smiles) That's what I like to see. Constable Henry Lovell smile.

(Henry chuckles and smiles at his grandmother. Henry thinks of his grandmother's counselling business, and wishes she runs her business in this office)

HENRY
(to Edith) Grandma. Your business. Can you run it here in this office?

(Edith has a think about Henry's request - running her mental health firm Go-Help at Henry's new Constable office)

EDITH
(to Henry) I guess I could. I could do it online. (to Inspector) What do you think Inspector?

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Edith) Yeah sure. We could do a partnership. I'd have to check with the Commissioner. A partnership with Go-Help & Taylor Police Station.

(Henry smiles)

EDITH
(smiles) Yeah. That would be good. That would be really good. We could help the community more.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) I'll chase that up. (to Henry)
 Let's start your first day off Henry.

HENRY
 (bends down, hugs Edith) I love you Grandma.
 I'll be back.

EDITH
 (being hugged) I love you to Henry. Have a
 good day Constable.

(Henry chuckles and smiles. Henry
 stands back up tall, and follows
 the Inspector out the door)

 INT. POLICE SEDAN - INSPECTOR DRIVING

(Inspector Smith Johnson is
 driving the police sedan to the
 next assigned police complaint.
 Henry breathes as he is nervous)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) You love your Grandma. Don't you.

HENRY
 (to Inspector) So much. So damn much. She.
 She's everything to me.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) Yeah. I. I can see that.

(Henry breathes)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (on walkie-talkie) Righto. We're driving the
 next police complaint. 3 Sturt Street.
 Thanks.

(Henry watches the Inspector
 perform his daily driving duties.
 Henry breathes)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) Righto Henry. We're driving to
 the location of our next police complaint.
 This complaint is of loud noise, and
 concerning drunken behaviour.

(This reminds Henry of himself,
 and worries)

HENRY
 (to Inspector) I. I. I. I'm not sure I want
 to do this. This-

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) My God, Henry. You were worse.
 You were inflamed, and dangerous to the
 community. This is just a nobody. No
 abilities. Nothing.

(Henry worries and starts to
 stress)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) Breathe Constable. Breathe.

INT. 3 STURT STREET

(Henry looks at the rear mirror at
 the front passenger side. He sees
 himself in his police attire and
 cap, and breathes. Minutes later,
 they arrive at the location of the
 next police complaint. Loud music
 is heard, Henry takes his seatbelt
 off and breathes. Inspector looks
 at a nervous Henry, and hands
 Henry a stun gun)

INSPECTOR
 (strict) Use only when I say so.

(Henry nods his head, and hops out
 of the car in panic. Henry
 breathes, and wishes his
 grandmother were here. Loud music
 is heard, with glass windows being
 smashed with thrown out wine
 glasses. Henry ducks and gets out
 of the way. Henry realises he is
 holding out his stun gun in
 nervousness, and is not attached
 to his police duty belt; as
 organisational standards suggest)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) Henry. Stun gun. Attach it to
 your police duty belt.

(Henry panics, and attaches his
 stun gun to the police duty belt.
 Henry breathes)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) Let's go. Follow me.

(Henry follows the Inspector to
 the front door of 3 Sturt Street.
 He breathes. The Inspector knocks
 on the door of 3 Sturt Street.

Four young men open the door,
appear drunk, and notice the
Inspector and Henry)

DRUNK MAN 1

(to Inspector, drunk) Copsy. Drunkedy. Cop.
Cop.

(Drunk Man 1 laughs. Drunk Man 2 &
3 laugh)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Drunk Man 1) Hello. We have received
complaints with screaming, throwing glasses
and drunken behaviour. I've come here to
tell you you need to quieten down please. No
more drinks. Nothing.

(Drunk Man 2 laughs it off.
Suddenly, the group attack the
Inspector. Henry panics, and
remains standing in his position.
The Inspector groans in agony,
punches back, and tries to break
free. Whilst in struggle, the
Inspector calls out for Henry to
use his stun gun on all drunk men)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) HENRY. HENRY. NOW.

(A panicked Henry pulls out his
stun gun from his police duty
belt. He points it at the drunk
men)

HENRY

(points stun gun at men) STOP. FREEZE. STOP.

(The drunk men can see Henry panic
underneath. Henry worries and
tries to remain calm)

DRUNK MAN 2

(to Henry, drunk) You're a scared man.
Aren't you? Are you new to the force? Are
ya?

(Drunk Man 2 clicks his fingers. Minutes later, a big bodybuilder man in a grey tshirt and black shorts, barefoot - attacks Henry from behind. Henry screams in panic, not wanting to lose control and go into a fiery tirade once again. Fred notices Henry being attacked, and fears Henry losing control; and tries to break free)

OFFICER SMITH JOHNSON

(angry, to drunk men) LET HIM GO. LET MY
CONSTABLE-

(Drunk Man 2 kicks Fred in the mouth. Fred groans, and his mouth begins to bleed. Fred tries to break free, but can't. Henry tries to break free from the bodybuilder, but can't. Henry screams in fear of himself. The bodybuilder tosses Henry's police cap off)

HENRY

(in fear) No. No. Let me. Let me be.

(The bodybuilder grabs Henry. Minutes later, the bodybuilder throws Henry inside the garage. Henry groans as he falls flat on his stomach. Henry groans and notices the bodybuilder. Minutes later, the group of drunk men enter the garage and see a capless Henry in struggle. Henry spits on the floor, and tries to stand up)

BODYBUILDER

(chuckles to Henry) Oh come on man. I do 50
sit-ups each day. How much do you do?

(The bodybuilder kicks Henry hard in the stomach; Henry groans. Henry stands up and tries to run away. The bodybuilder grabs Henry's arms hard. Henry groans in pain, the bodybuilder throws Henry back down. Henry falls flat on his stomach again, Henry screams. The bodybuilder flips Henry over, Henry groans. The bodybuilder stamps his feet hard on Henry's stomach, Henry screams in agony. He stamps harder. Minutes later, Henry loses it and screams at the bodybuilder.

Henry's chest and stomach engulfs into flames, tearing his police jacket off, leaving him shirtless. Henry jumps back up, shirtless, and attacks the bodybuilder. Henry's arms and hands engulf into flames in anger - Henry pushes the bodybuilder down, bends down, and punches the bodybuilder repeatedly whilst in flames. The bodybuilder is shocked of Henry's devilish ability, and tries to fight back)

BODYBUILDER

(to Henry, scared) YOU GODDAMN DEVIL.

(The bodybuilder kicks Henry's inflamed stomach. The bodybuilder screams from his foot being burned by Henry's inflamed stomach. Henry punches the bodybuilder swiftly in anger, and screams. The bodybuilder groans and falls unconscious. Minutes later, Drunk Man 1 throws a busted tyre, at Henry's back. Henry groans as he feels the heavy weight on his back, Henry stands up inflamed, and in anger. Henry screams at Drunk Man 1, and throws the busted tyre back at Drunk Man 1. All the other drunk men run away. Henry looks down at his barechest, embarrassed, and is tired from the fight. Henry uses the calming technique his grandmother taught him, and tries to calm down. The flames on Henry's body dissipate minutes later. Moments later, Inspector Smith Johnson notices an aggravated, shirtless Henry)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(worried) Are you okay Henry?

(Henry shakes his head, and covers his barechest with his arms)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(worried) You burned your police jacket off-

(Henry nods his head, embarrassed)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(worried) It's alright, I've got a spare... I'm not sure if it will fit you. But uh...

(The Inspector is shocked of Henry's inability to keep a shirt on. Henry breathes, and looks at the window of the garage)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(worried) Can I do anything or?

HENRY
(unhappy) I want to spend time with my grandma. I want to be with her-

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(worried) Okay sure. Sure. Let's go.

(Minutes later, the Inspector drives himself and Henry back to the police station)

INT. TAYLOR POLICE STATION - HENRY'S OFFICE

(Inspector Smith Johnson & Henry arrive at the police station. Edith is in her office, drawing up a word document on her laptop. Inspector Smith Johnson opens the office door, Edith notices the Inspector)

EDITH
(to Inspector) Hi. Where? Where's Henry?

(Minutes later, Edith notices her shirtless grandson walk in. Edith realises something has happened)

EDITH
(to Henry) Hey. Hey. What happened?

(Henry bends down, and hugs his grandmother. Edith taps Henry on the back for support, Henry hugs his grandmother tightly, not wanting to let go)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(worried) Edith. Something happened.

EDITH
(to Inspector) I know that. But what?

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Edith) We were attacked. That's all. We were singled out. I I couldn't help Henry. I'm not sure what happened-

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly, protecting her with his strength. Edith attempts to talk to Henry)

EDITH
(to Henry) Henry. Can we talk? Can we??

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother, and looks up at her. Henry nods his head)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Edith) I will let Henry talk to you in private. I'll just be in my office. I'll come back in 10 mins.

EDITH
(to Inspector) Okay thanks.

(The Inspector closes the door. Edith watches Henry stand up. Henry grabs a chair and sits beside Edith's desk. Edith holds Henry's hand. Henry puts his head down, completely tired, Edith strokes Henry's black hair)

EDITH
(to Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay.

(Henry looks up at his grandmother. Henry holds his grandmother's hand)

EDITH
(to Henry) Crazy first day, huh?

(Henry nods his head)

HENRY
(tired) Yes. Very. Very crazy.

EDITH
(to Henry) Hey... What happened?

HENRY
(to Edith) Like the Inspector said. We were both attacked, singled out. When uh.

(Henry gets upset over his fear of himself. Henry hugs his grandmother tightly, not wanting to let go. Edith pats Henry on the back for support)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) Henry. It's okay. I love you for who you are. Your ability is what makes you. And I will always love you for who you are-

(Henry is touched by Edith's words, and continues hugging his grandmother. Henry continues holding his grandmother's hand)

HENRY

(upset) When the Inspector got attacked. I. I got scared. Of myself. The drunk guys. One big drunk guy attacked me from behind. I was petrified of myself. I tried to get away, they wouldn't let me. They just threw me back down. And. And. I-

(Edith finishes Henry's sentence. Henry continues hugging his grandmother; Edith strokes Henry's back for support)

EDITH

(counselling) And you lost control.

(Henry cries. Edith hugs Henry for support)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) It's okay. It's okay.

(Henry cries in fear of himself)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) It's okay. I'm here. I'm here.

HENRY

(cries) I hate it when it happens.

EDITH

(hugging Henry) I know. I know.

(Edith stops hugging Henry. An upset, fearful Henry looks at his grandmother)

HENRY

(cries) I don't like what it feels like. I hate the feeling of it. I hate it-

EDITH

(questions Henry) Of your ability?

HENRY

(cries) Yes. The feeling of it. It doesn't feel good. I hate it.

EDITH

(holds Henry's hand) It's all done. It's all over. It's all over.

HENRY

(cries) I want to get rid of it Grandma. I want to so bad...

(Edith is saddened to see an upset Henry cry in fear of himself. Minutes later, Inspector opens the door with a new police jacket. Henry remains calm, and tries to be brave)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) Are you all good Henry?

HENRY

(saddened) I'm fine. I'm fine.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(throws jacket to Henry) Try this on.

(Inspector throws the police jacket to Henry. Henry catches it; and throws the police jacket on himself. The jacket is too big. Edith chuckles)

EDITH

(chuckles) Woah Henry. That does not fit you.

(Henry chuckles at Edith, and wipes his tears. The Inspector laughs)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) Well that's two sizes too big-

(The Inspector laughs. Edith & Henry chuckle)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) Well it's too big. I got to order another size. Give it to me-

(Henry takes the police jacket off. Henry chuckles at his grandmother. Henry hands the police jacket to the Inspector)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) Oh Henry. I'm sorry for what happened today. Wasn't the best day.

HENRY

(to Inspector) I. It's okay. It's just. I-

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) What??

HENRY

(to Inspector) I don't know if I want to do this. I don't like it when I go up in flames. It does not. It does not feel good. I hate it-

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(chuckles) What would it feel like? Just wondering.

(Henry is offended, and glares at the Inspector. The Inspector worries)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) Woah Henry. Calm down. Simple question.

HENRY

(annoyed) It does not feel good. It makes me sick. It's like. I don't know-

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) Adrenaline maybe-

HENRY

(to Fred) Sometimes. But mostly... power. And I hate it-

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) Woah. Okay. Enough talking.

(Edith puts the spare police jacket in the storage locker. Henry breathes and looks at his grandmother, and smiles)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) Well uh. I know you guys no longer have a home.

HENRY

(saddened) Because of me.

EDITH

(annoyed) Henry. Don't say that. It was not your fault.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) All I've got is one spare bed at the police station.

(Henry immediately wishes his grandmother to have the bed, and himself in a cell)

HENRY

(to Inspector) I'll have the cell.

(Edith isn't pleased with Henry's decision, and refuses to have Henry in the cell)

EDITH
(to Henry) No you're not Henry.

HENRY
(upset, to Edith) Why not? Grandma, I have bad dreams sometimes. That causes me to lose control sometimes. I don't want to burn this building down. You're in here. No.

EDITH
(to Henry) Henry. You are not a prisoner. You're running from yourself again.

HENRY
(upset, to Edith) Grandma. I. I can't trust...

(Edith refuses)

EDITH
(refuses) Henry. No.

(Edith refuses to listen to Henry's excuses. Henry gets worked up)

HENRY
(annoyed) I can't trust...

EDITH
(refuses) Henry. NO-

(Henry screams in anger, and stands up. He lights himself in flames, in anger)

HENRY
(anrgily) I CAN'T TRUST MYSELF. MYSELF. MYSELFFF...

(Henry burns the table into pieces. Edith screams as the table burns in half. An inflamed Henry is not happy, and turns his back. Edith panics in shock, as her grandson leashes his anger on her. Henry cries. The Inspector is shocked, and sees Edith panic)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Edith) Edith. Are you? Are you okay??

(Edith cries, and walks out. Henry cries as she does)

HENRY
(cries) Grandma. Grandma. No.

(Edith closes the door of Henry's office. Edith cries, the Inspector fronts Edith)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(worried) Edith. Are you?

EDITH
(cries) I'm fine. I'm just giving Henry space. I'm. I'm just giving him space-

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(worried) Edith. Answer honestly. Are you scared of your grandson? Be honest-

EDITH
(upset) Not really no. But when he unleashes his anger on me, yes.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Edith) Oh my. I'm sorry-

(Henry runs to his grandmother, and cries after he unleashed his anger on her. Henry begs for forgiveness)

HENRY
(cries) Grandma. Grandma. I'm sorry. I'm sorry. I'm-

(Edith looks at her upset grandson; begging for forgiveness, not wanting her to leave)

HENRY
(cries) Please Grandma. Forgive. Forgive me. Forgive me.

(Henry cries. Edith breathes, and hugs her grandson. Henry hugs his grandmother tightly, and apologises for his anger on her)

HENRY
(cries, hugging Edith) I'm sorry Grandma. Me sorry. Me sorry. I sorry. I sorry-

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother. Edith forgives Henry)

EDITH

(to Henry) Okay then. Well it is time for me to go to bed.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) All right Edith. It's the third room on the right.

EDITH

(to Inspector) Alright thanks. Goodnight Henry. I love you.

(Henry hugs his grandmother one more time. Edith feels the warmth from Henry's skin to her body; warming her up for the cold night. Moments later, Henry stops hugging his grandmother)

HENRY

(to Edith) Good night Grandma. I love you to. And sorry for before.

EDITH

(to Henry) No worries. Good night.

 INT. TAYLOR POLICE STATION - UNDERGROUND
 ENCLOSED CELL

(Edith heads to bed. The Inspector walks Henry down to an underground, enclosed area of the police station. The Inspector opens the door, and a big enclosed holding cell meets Henry's eyes)

HENRY

(to Inspector) Is this it?

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) That's it fireman.

(Henry doesn't like being called "fireman," and glares at the Inspector. The Inspector worries)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) Sorry. I won't call you that.

HENRY

(to Inspector) I don't like that. You just remind me of this ability that I hate. And wish I didn't have.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) All right. I won't call you that. I won't.

Made in Highland

(Henry nods his head, and enters the holding cell. The Inspector closes the holding cell shut. Henry bends down, and lays on his back on the floor)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) I'll have to get a better setup for you. It's going to be uncomfortable sleeping on the floor.

HENRY

(to Inspector) It's fine. Goodnight.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) Goodnight Constable.

(Minutes later, The Inspector turns the lights off and leaves. Wide awake hours later, Henry looks up at the ceiling in darkness, and breathes. He breathes again. A loud noise is heard - this scares Henry as he jumps up to find the source of noise. The loud noise is in fact - Vince and Bobby entering the back door - with whom Henry does not see or notice. Henry breathes and lays back down on his back. Moments later, Henry falls asleep. Minutes later, Vince and Bobby track Henry's cell by Henry's phone location - inside Henry's backpack, inside the cell. Moments later, Vince sees his asleep son lying down in a cell. Bobby notices Vince's son)

BOBBY

(whispers to Vince) He's asleep. Your son is asleep Vince..

VINCE

(whispers to Bobby) I know... I see... He won't be asleep for long though. He's gonna burn this station down any minute. Fancy the cops, locking up a powerful man like my son.

(Bobby notices Henry's skinny but muscular physique)

BOBBY

(whispers to Vince) Even though he's a fireman, he doesn't look very strong.

VINCE

(whispers to Bobby) It's funny, hey. He looks like a skinny runt, but he is... VERY strong.

(An asleep Henry tosses over to the other side, and continues sleeping)

BOBBY

(whispers to Vince) Unleash that magic inside of him Vince.

(Vince pulls out the stun gun he found on Henry's office desk. He aims the gun at Henry's waist)

VINCE

(whispers to Henry) Show me your fire son. Show it to me.

(Vince shoots Henry in the waist with a stun gun. Vince ducks away from Henry's view. Vince hears his son scream whilst being shot, and groans in the process. Henry jumps in anger)

BOBBY

(whispers; to Vince) He's awake now Vince... and he's pissed...

(An aggravated Henry paces around the cell. Henry can sense someone is watching him, and plans to find out who)

HENRY

(determined) I know someone is here. I know you're there.

(Vince chuckles as he hears his determined son planning to find him & Bobby. Henry continues pacing around his cell)

HENRY

(determined) Where are you? I will find you? I will-

(Bobby chuckles. Henry continues pacing around his cell)

HENRY

(determined) You thought you could shock me with my stun gun and get away with it. You will pay. For hurting me. You will PAY.

(Henry exits the cell. Vince can hear Henry's footsteps)

VINCE

(whispers to Bobby) He's coming. He's coming. Get ready to stun him again.

(Henry takes small footsteps; looking for the suspect. Henry walks the opposite direction to where Vince & Bobby are hiding)

BOBBY
(whispers to Vince) He's coming...

VINCE
(whispers to Bobby) I know.

(Henry searches the room outside the cell in the opposite direction)

HENRY
(determined) I will find you. I will.

(Henry moves closer to Vince's and Bobby's location. Vince comes up with a plan to attack his son)

VINCE
(whispers to Bobby) Bobby. I've got a plan.... Attack Henry from behind. And I will shoot him. Henry will lose control, and things will start to burn. Fire alarms will go off. Just you watch...

(Bobby follows Vince's advice. Bobby quietly moves to the opposite direction of Henry. Henry catches Bobby, and ambushes him. Henry chokeholds Bobby in anger, Bobby groans in agony)

BOBBY
(groans) HELP. HELP. POLICE. POLICE...

HENRY
(chokeholds Bobby) WHAT DID YOU DO TO ME?
WHAT DID YOU?

(Vince makes an appearance, and aims a gun at Henry's chest)

VINCE
(shouts to Henry) LET HIM GO NOW.

(Henry notices his father, and gets angry. Henry pushes Bobby to the ground. Bobby groans and gets up. Vince notices his son in person)

VINCE
(to Henry) So much power. So much strength.
Why hide it?

(Henry breathes heavily in anger)

VINCE
(to Henry) Henry. YOU LISTEN TO ME.

HENRY
(to Vince) GET STUFFED-

(Vince laughs)

HENRY
(to Vince) GIVE ME BACK MY GUN.

(Vince threatens Henry, and keeps the gun aimed at Henry's chest)

VINCE
(threatens Henry) YOU LISTEN TO ME SON.
LISTEN. OR YOU GET SHOT AGAIN.

(Henry glares at Vince, and grits his teeth at his father)

VINCE
(threatens Henry) The next shot I pull will attack your nervous system. Do you want that again? Lose control... You'll kill your grandma. Burn the whole station down. DO YOU WANT THAT? We all know how much she means to you?

(Henry fears losing control, and killing his grandma in an accidental fiery tirade. Henry gives in, and listens to his evil father)

HENRY
(scared; to Vince) WHAT DO YOU WANT? WHAT DO YOU WANT?

VINCE
(to Henry) To burn Bobby-

(Henry looks at Bobby; Bobby is shocked to hear Vince's pleas, and fears getting burned alive by Henry. Bobby now casts Vince as an enemy, and plans to escape. Vince grabs Bobby by the t-shirt and drags him back to Henry. Bobby looks afraid of Henry, and hates Vince)

BOBBY
(fearful) Henry. No. No. I can save your grandma. I can call for help. I can-

VINCE
(to Henry) KILL HIM. OR YOU'RE GETTING SHOT.

(Henry risks getting shot, and allows Bobby to go free - in return for saving his grandmother from his outburst of flames)

HENRY
(screams to Bobby) Please. Save my Grandma.
THIRD DOOR ON THE RIGHT-

(Henry gets shot by the gun, and engulfs into heavy, powerful flames. Vince laughs, Henry stands up inflamed, and tries to smash his way outside; to avoid further destruction to the police station. Vince grabs Henry by the legs to avoid escape; Henry screams in anger at his father)

INT. TAYLOR POLICE STATION - HENRY'S OFFICE

(Edith is sleeping, Bobby knocks on the door and opens it. Bobby wiggles Edith, in attempt of waking her up. Edith wakes up and notices the dwarf stranger by her side. Edith worries and start to smell smoke, Edith realises it is Henry having lost control again)

EDITH
(worried) Henry. (to Bobby) Who? Who are you?

BOBBY
(to Henry) Your grandson told me to save you. Quick. The fire is getting heavy and closer to us.

(Henry's large blaze of fire burns the Inspector's room to bits. Edith can smell the fire come closer to her)

EDITH
(worried) Oh no. No. Let's go.

(Bobby, now a friendly stranger, helps Edith evacuate safely. Minutes later, most of the entire police station burns down to bits, and is now demolished. Ash flows from the ceiling)

 INT. TAYLOR POLICE STATION - UNDERGROUND
 ENCLOSED CELL

(The flames from Henry's body hit all-four walls of the underground enclosed cell. Vince puts his foot on Henry's neck. Henry struggles to breathe, Henry screams at his father)

VINCE
 (to Henry) BURN SON. BURN. LET IT OUT. LET
 ME SEE YOUR GOD-GIVEN POWER. LET ME SEE-

(Flames from Henry's back begins to burn the carpets to shreds, Vince notices. Henry screams in anger, and pushes Vince down with his feet. Vince falls down, Henry screams in anger and bends down. Vince puts his hand on Henry's burning heart, feeling his heartbeat; burning his hand in the process)

VINCE
 (laughs) FIRE. FIRE-

(Henry grits his teeth in anger and breaks his father's burnt hand. Vince screams in agony from the burns and breakage of his hand, and punches Henry's inflamed stomach hard with the other hand; burning that hand as well. Vince groans. Henry punches his father in the nose repeatedly, Vince screams, Henry eventually knocks his father out)

 INT. OUTSIDE TAYLOR POLICE STATION

(Edith & Bobby wait outside. Edith worries for Henry. Minutes later, the Inspector arrives in his police sedan, and notices the now demolished Taylor Police Station. He is shocked, and notices Edith)

Made in Highland

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (shocked) OH NO. Where's Henry? What happened?

(Edith cries with her head down)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Edith) Edith. What happened? This is police business.

EDITH
 (cries) I don't know. I woke up and this guy next to me. Told me to evacuate. The place was on fire.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Edith) By Henry. What?? How??

EDITH
 (upset) I don't know. I don't know. He might've had a bad dream. I don't know--

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Edith) I'll try to save him.

BOBBY
 (to Inspector) Yes. Save him from himself--

(Edith isn't pleased with Bobby's commentary. Edith glares at Bobby)

BOBBY
 (to Edith) Sorry Miss. Sorry Ma'am.

 INT. DEMOLISHED TAYLOR POLICE STATION

(Inspector Smith Johnson walks into what was the police station. He cries in shock as his well-beloved office of 20 years is completely demolished, all case files for criminal cases have been destroyed. Inspector Smith Johnson walks down to the underground enclosed cell. The Inspector notices an upset, shirtless Henry crying with his hands on his head, with a deeply wounded Vince on the ground. The Inspector is not happy, and wants answers)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) Henry. What happened?

(Henry hears the Inspector's voice, and ignores him.)

Henry is shocked and is in disbelief of what has just happened. The Inspector gets annoyed)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Henry) CONSTABLE HENRY LOVELL. What the HELL HAPPENED??

(Henry cries as he turns towards the Inspector. The Inspector is in disbelief)

HENRY
(cries) Is Grandma okay?? Is she?

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Henry) Yes she's fine. She's fine... Now what happened?

(Henry shakes his head and cries. Henry paces around)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(annoyed) HENRY. DON'T IGNORE ME. THIS IS POLICE BUSINESS--

(Henry continues shaking his head, and continues pacing around)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Henry) Who is this wounded man on the ground? WHO IS HE?

(Henry stops pacing, and looks at the Inspector)

HENRY
(to Inspector) My Dad.

(The Inspector is shocked to having see Henry's wounded father)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Henry) And you hurt your OWN FATHER?

HENRY
(to Inspector) It's a long story.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Henry) Start explaining.

HENRY
(concerned) I want Grandma. Can she be here with me?

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
(to Henry) Henry. Answer the question.

(Henry is worried)

HENRY

(to Inspector) Okay. I. He came to hurt me.
And I defended myself.

(The Inspector is confused to understand why a father would want to hurt his own son)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) What? Your Dad hurting you.
You're unbelievable.

(Henry gets annoyed by the Inspector's ignorance, and shouts at the Inspector)

HENRY

(shouts at Inspector) IT IS TRUE.

(The Inspector listens to Henry, but still finds Henry's story to be false. Minutes later, Henry notices his grandmother, and cries knowing she's safe from his blaze of fire)

HENRY

(crying) Grandma. Grandma.

(Henry immediately hugs his grandmother)

EDITH

(worried) Henry. Henry. What happened?

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother, and doesn't listen to her question - more concerned about her safety)

HENRY

(crying) Grandma. Grandma. I'm. I'm uncontrollable-

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. Don't talk like that.
Don't...

(Edith notices her injured son-in-law, a deeply wounded Vince. Both Vince's hands are burnt, with one hand broken, with a punched, fractured nose. Edith is lost for words, and realises Henry fought his father in defence)

EDITH

(to Henry) Oh my? He was he?

HENRY

(cries to Edith) That's why I lost control.
He made me lose control.

(Edith hugs Henry. Inspector Smith
Johnson doesn't believe Henry.
Moments later, Edith stops hugging
Henry)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Henry) HEY. Your father doesn't control
your emotions, you do.

EDITH

(to Inspector) There's more to the story
Inspector.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) Explain. Go ahead.

EDITH

(to Inspector) His father is a very evil,
psychotic man. Ever since he learned Henry,
his son, was born with a fire ability - he
became obsessed with him. Wanting Henry to
burn things of all things. Just for the
thrill of it.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) So he's a bit of a pyromania. His
father.

EDITH

(to Inspector) Yes his father is. Even
before Henry was born, his father would play
around with fire in his university days and
at home. In his spare times... talk about
chemical experiments with fire. And even he
would mess around with pyrotechnics for fun.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) What's his profession? He sure
does sound like a pyromania.

EDITH

(to Inspector) Chemical Engineer. And yes,
he is.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(shocked, to Edith) Go on.

EDITH

(to Inspector) Anyway. My daughter found out
what he was up to, and kept Henry away from
his father... Of course he didn't like that.

(MORE)

EDITH (CONT'D)

Vince wanted Henry to burn buildings down, kill people he didn't like. Vince wanted Henry to be an unstoppable criminal. His mother and I did not allow that, and raised him well. Raised him to be a good man.

(Henry smiles at Edith)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) Oh GOD.

EDITH

(to Inspector) Then. Sadly a week later, she was murdered by a gangster. The killer has not been found. It was traumatic for myself as her mother, and for Henry, her son.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) I understand. I understand. I will contact the ambulance to take this Vince to Taylor General Hospital. But Henry...

(Henry worries for what the Inspector is about to say to him)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) Look. The whole police station has been burned down because of this brutal battle between Henry and his father. The commissioner is going to be pissed. And I'm quite frankly; not happy. And I'm not sure where you both are going to stay... Look I don't want to be rude. But I uh... I don't want Henry to burn my place down. Whether it's accidental or not.

(Henry understands the Inspector, and is embarrassed. Henry puts his head down)

EDITH

(understands) I understand. Henry and I will figure something out. Um thank you. Thank you for all that you've done.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) And I don't think Henry can continue being a Constable anymore. After this incident... it would be a bit corrupt to the Taylor Police. That's if we still have him on board; even with all the destruction and pain he's done.

(Henry continues having his head down, ashamed of his actions)

EDITH

(to Inspector) I understand. I will use up my savings to pay for the new funded Police Station.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) Edith. You won't have money for that. You're just about to retire, aren't you? Shouldn't you be saving for your retirement or no??

EDITH

(to Inspector) Please. It's the least I could do.

HENRY

(cries to Inspector) I will put money to it also.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith & Henry) You really didn't have to. But I mean... Look I don't know what's gonna happen. The commissioner is going to be pissed... like I said. And I think he might want to sue.

(Henry panics. The Inspector notices)

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) And I. Look that might not happen... it may happen. And uh. You really should be saving for any legal fees if you have to.

EDITH

(to Inspector) Maybe if I help pay for the newly built police station... he may think otherwise.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) I can only hope. Good luck... to both of you...

EDITH

(to Inspector) I will forward the funds to your bank. Could you give me your banking details?

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON

(to Edith) Yes sure.

(Henry is deeply ashamed by all that has happened, and breathes whilst looking at the now demolished police station. Henry cries. The Inspector hands his banking details on a note to Edith. Edith takes the note)

HENRY

(cries) I'm sorry. I'm sorry Inspector.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry) It'll be fine Henry. It should be fine. Still work on better control.

HENRY
 (cries) I will. Bye.

INSPECTOR SMITH JOHNSON
 (to Henry & Edith) Bye.

EDITH
 (to Inspector) Bye.

PART 1 ENDS

#PART 2"
 INT. TAYLOR RIVER

(Minutes later, Henry and Edith sit by the river, having no choice but to live it out rough for a while, until they can accommodate themselves in another house. Henry is sitting bare chested, with his police trousers & boots on, with his back against the tree, with his knees standing up, holding his hands together, with his head down. Edith sits down and comforts Henry)

EDITH
 (counselling Henry) It's okay. It's okay.

HENRY
 (cries) Grandma. This. This is all my fault. Everything. Everything.

EDITH
 (counselling Henry) Henry. Don't worry about it. Don't worry about it. We will find some place new.

HENRY
 (cries) Until I burn that down. Because I'm a FREAK.

EDITH
 (to Henry) Henry. Don't say that. I love you for who you are.

HENRY
 (cries) You always say that Grandma. But... I'm.. I'm becoming more and more dangerous.

EDITH

(grabs Henry's hand) Henry. Look at me. Look at me.

(An upset Henry looks at his grandmother)

EDITH

(to Henry) This was not your fault. This was not your fault

(Edith puts her other hand on Henry's bare chest, feeling his heartbeat)

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. I love you no matter what Henry. I will always love you. I will love you for who you are. I will love you for your ability. You will not change for me. I will always love you. We will get through this together. We will gain control. We will. Believe in me and yourself.

(Henry cries but smiles at his grandmother's kind words. Henry hugs his grandmother tightly, Edith feels the warmth of Henry's skin on a cold, windy night)

HENRY

(hugging Edith, cries) I... I love you grandma. I love you.

EDITH

(hugging Henry) I will always love you. No matter what. I'll always be here with you.

(Henry cries whilst hugging his grandmother, acknowledging his grandmother's kind words)

HENRY

(hugging Edith) I love you.

(Edith stops hugging Henry)

EDITH

(to Henry) We will get through this Henry. We will. We will.

(Henry cries and nods his head at his grandmother)

HENRY

(cries to Edith) Grandma. I. I.

EDITH
 (questions Henry) What is it Henry? What is it?

HENRY
 (to Edith) I. I. I was scared-

EDITH
 (to Henry) Of what?

HENRY
 (to Edith) Of my. When I lost control at the. Police. Station. The fire was. Huge. It scared me. That's why I wanted to make sure you got out alive. I wanted to make sure. I wanted to make sure. I wanted to...

(Edith hugs Henry once more. Henry cries in Edith's arms)

EDITH
 (comforting Henry) It's okay. It's okay.

(Henry continues crying in Edith's arms.)

EDITH
 (comforting Henry) It's okay. It's okay.

(Edith stops hugging Henry)

EDITH
 (to Henry) Henry. Get some rest. Get some sleep. Sleep this incident off. So tomorrow, we can move on.

HENRY
 (cries to Edith) Okay. Okay.

EDITH
 (to Henry) I'm off to bed as well I think.

HENRY
 (cries to Edith) Goodnight Grandma. Have a good sleep. But uh... where? Where are you going to sleep?

EDITH
 (to Henry) On the ground Henry. It's okay. It's okay.

(Henry is worried Edith will be uncomfortable. Henry stands up, looks around and sees a tree with fresh bark. Edith wonders what Henry seeks to do)

EDITH

(to Henry) What are you doing Henry? What are you doing?

(Edith watches Henry ignite his hand in flames, and burns a big chunk of bark off the tree. The bark falls down, Henry breathes and dissipates the flame off his hand. Edith witnesses Henry using the calming technique she taught him)

EDITH

(impressed) Good on you Henry. You're gaining control.

(Henry turns his back, and smiles. Henry has a big chunk of bark on his hand and bends down towards Edith)

EDITH

(to Henry) What's that for?

HENRY

(to Edith) I thought. Maybe. A. Pillow.

(Edith is impressed by Henry's thinking skills)

EDITH

(to Henry) Good thinking Henry. Good thinking.

(Henry smiles and puts the bark where Edith will place her head once she lies down. Henry stands up, and smiles at his grandmother. Edith lies down, and puts her head on the tree bark. Henry notices and smiles, Edith finds the tree bark surprisingly comfortable)

EDITH

(to Henry) My Goodness Henry. It is very comfortable. Good thinking.

(Henry smiles)

HENRY

(to Edith) Good night Grandma. Good night.

(Minutes later, Edith falls asleep. Henry lies down on the ground metres away, and looks at the night sky. Henry breathes, and thinks of what this day has been.

Henry breathes, and is fully alert and awake. An hour later, Henry is still awake - not wanting to go to sleep, afraid of himself losing control of his ability. Henry stands up, and decides to go for a swim. Henry looks at his grandmother before he dives in the river, and smiles. Henry breathes and takes a dive in the river - swimming 50m upwards. 10 minutes later, Edith is sound asleep. Bobby appears out of nowhere, wishing to be a part of Edith & Henry, and correct his wrongdoings with Vince. Bobby bends down, and sits next to an asleep Edith)

BOBBY

(whispers to Edith) Hello lady. I'm not sure what your name is. But uh. I uh. I'm the one who saved you from that fire. Your grandson created. I uh-

(Henry swims his way back)

BOBBY

(whispers to Edith) Henry. Surely is a powerful force. So powerful. So damn powerful. Ain't he?

(Edith continues to be sound asleep, not hearing a word Bobby is saying)

BOBBY

(whispers to Edith) So powerful. Like a God. Like an Emperor. Like a King.

(Henry arrives back to the location of his grandmother. Henry stands up and exits the river, drenched in water. Henry looks at his grandmother, and notices a stranger in the dark beside his grandmother. Henry becomes provoked, and shouts at the stranger - who he can not clearly see)

HENRY

(provoked) HEY. HEY. WHAT ARE YOU DOING TO MY GRANDMA??

(Bobby panics as he sees an aggravated Henry, Bobby plans to escape.

Henry ignites his hand in flames and shoots fire next to Bobby. Bobby dodges. Henry screams in anger, and pushes Bobby to the tree, Bobby groans in pain)

BOBBY

(panics) Henry. Henry. Henry. It's me. It's me-

(Henry becomes angry. Bobby pulls out his mini torch from his pocket, Bobby turns it on. Henry notices Bobby)

BOBBY

(worried) Calm down man. Calm down. Calm. Calm-

(Henry calms down, and lets Bobby go. Henry bends down to his grandmother, to regain his strength and breathe)

BOBBY

(to Henry) Damn... man. You're. You're very strong... my God. I wasn't going to hurt your grandma. I wasn't going to.

(Henry wipes his eyes, and is very tense. Henry shakes his head, and becomes overprotective of his grandmother)

BOBBY

(to Henry) Are you alright man?? Are you alright??

(Bobby taps Henry on the shoulder. Henry fidgets and glares at Bobby)

BOBBY

(worried, to Henry) Sorry. I. I.

HENRY

(serious) I. I. I want you to go. Please go. Just go.

BOBBY

(worried, to Henry) Look Henry. I. I just want--

(Henry becomes impatient, and screams at Bobby. Henry's back engulfs in flames, Henry realises it and hates it. Bobby notices Henry's inflamed back, and steps backwards in fear)

BOBBY

(worried, to Henry) Okay. I'll go. I'll go.

(Bobby leaves. Henry cries to himself. Henry breathes, and the flames off his back dissipate. Minutes later, Henry falls asleep. The next morning, Edith wakes up, Henry is sound asleep. Edith stands up, and places her wallet in her pocket - and heads to the local shops. Hours later, Edith returns to the abandoned hut. Henry is sound asleep, and breathes. Edith sits down, opens her shopping bags - purchased items include clothing for Henry, clothing for herself, joggers for Henry & Edith, socks for Henry & Edith, sleeping bags, a laptop, outdoor cooking utensils, paper plates. Moments later, Henry wakes up. Henry lays on his back, and opens his eyes. He sees the sun blaring in his eyes, Edith notices her grandson is awake)

EDITH

(to Henry) Good morning Mister.

(Henry hears Edith's voice, and smiles. Henry whilst laying down, turns his head, facing Edith's direction. Henry smiles at Edith)

HENRY

(smiles) Good morning Grandma.

(Henry sits up and moves closer to his grandmother. Henry hugs his grandmother tightly; his first morning hug. Edith feels the warmth of Henry's skin on hers)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) How was your sleep?

HENRY

(hugging Edith) Alright. Alright I guess.

EDITH

(hugging Henry) That's good. That's good.

(Edith stops hugging Henry moments later. Henry smiles at his grandmother. Henry watches his grandmother's hands on shopping bags)

EDITH

(to Henry) So Henry. I went to the shop today. Got a few essentials--

(Henry appears worried and overprotective of his grandmother, of his knowledge of her going to the shops alone)

HENRY

(worried) Grandma. Were? Were you okay?

EDITH

(worried) Henry. Of course. Of course I was okay. It's okay--

HENRY

(worried) Okay. I. I just. Me worry so much.

EDITH

(to Henry) I know you do. I know. God will look after me when you can't. Okay.

(Henry smiles and agrees. Edith pulls out 5 tshirts for Henry - one green-checked, one plain blue, one plain white, one graphic green tshirt, one plain red. Henry notices the tshirts, Edith hands them to Henry)

EDITH

(to Henry) I've got you 5 t-shirts.

HENRY

(looks at tshirts) Thank you Grandma. Thank you.

EDITH

(to Henry) And two jeans. And two shorts.

(Edith hands Henry two jeans - a blue and a black. Henry looks at his jeans. Edith hands Henry two shorts - black and blue moments later. Henry looks at his brand new shorts. Edith pulls out her clothing, and looks at hers)

HENRY

(smiles) Thank you Grandma. Thank you.

EDITH

(to Henry) And I've got you some green joggers and a 5-pack of white socks.

(Edith hands Henry his green joggers. Henry holds his green joggers up, and looks at them. Edith hands Henry his 5 pack of white socks - Henry handles them and looks at them as well. Edith pulls out her white joggers, and her pack of 5 socks. Minutes later, Edith pulls out two blue thermal Winter sleeping bags. She hands one to Henry, and puts hers on the ground. Henry grabs his sleeping bag, and looks at it)

(Henry looks at his grandmother, and smiles. Edith notices Henry's smile, and thinks of her daughter)

EDITH

(to Henry) You've got your mother's smile Henry. I feel like I'm talking to her sometimes.

HENRY

(smiles) Yeah. You. You always say that.

EDITH

(to Henry) Because it's true. It's true.

(Henry breathes and becomes stronger around his grandmother. Henry smiles. Edith make a funny face, Henry chuckles)

HENRY

(chuckles) You're funny Grandma. You are funny.

EDITH

(smiles) I like seeing you happy Henry. It makes me happy.

HENRY

(to Edith) You make me happy Grandma. I love being around you. I really do.

(Meanwhile, the Taylor Police Station arrive near Henry's location through phone tracking. The Commissioner has learned of Henry's fiery attack and destruction of what was once the structure of Taylor Police Station.

The Commissioner plans to attack Henry, arrest him, and put him up for trial. The Commissioner hires up four police officers - this being the deputy commissioner, the assistant commissioner, the chief superintendent, and the superintendent to ambush Henry)

COMMISSIONER

(to all four) Alright. We are searching for a young man by the name of Henry James Lovell. Alright. Got it down-

ASSISTANT COMMISSIONER

(to Commissioner) Yes sir. Henry James Lovell.

COMMISSIONER

(to all four) Black hair, hazel eyes, tends to always be shirtless, can never keep a shirt on, and can produce fire from his torso, alright. And he tends to always be with his grandmother, someone who is very special to him.

ASSISTANT COMMISSIONER

(to Commissioner) Yes sir. We four have got it. We know who we're tracking.

COMMISSIONER

(to all four) This is the young man who destroyed our beloved Taylor Police Station. Destroyed the entire building, and criminal case files. These files were very sensitive to the community, and now they are destroyed. Fire at him with a gun if you will, as you will be up against... Let's say... a fire-being. Someone who could kill us all with flames from his body. Freakish I know. But that's who we're up against.

ASSISTANT COMMISSIONER

(to Commissioner) Yes sir. We're ready.

COMMISSIONER

(to all four) As Henry's phone tracking suggests, he seems to be at the river somewhere. Track him.

ASSISTANT COMMISSIONER

(to Commissioner) What about his grandmother?

COMMISSIONER

(to Assistant Commissioner) We shall take her with us, if Henry does not comply. Now go.

(All four high-up police officers search for Henry. Meanwhile, Henry tries on his plain blue shirt. Edith notices)

EDITH

(looks at Henry) Well that looks nice. Yeah that does. Is it a comfortable fit?

HENRY

(looks at Edith) Yes Grandma. It is. It is very comfortable.

(Henry takes his plain blue shirt off. Edith hands Henry the green-checked shirt, Henry puts it on himself. Henry finds it a comfortable fit, Edith notices)

EDITH

(looks at Henry) I like that style. That style looks nice.

HENRY

(looks down at shirt) Yeah. Yeah it does. Grandma... You are a fashion expert.

(Henry takes the green-checked shirt off and hands it to Edith. Minutes later, a gun sits at Henry's bare-back. Henry feels the tip of the gun on his back, turns his head, and notices the grumpy Commissioner. Edith panics. The other police officers surround Edith, Henry notices and doesn't like it)

COMMISSIONER

(to Henry) Do you know who I am young man?

(Henry glares at the Commissioner)

EDITH

(frantic, to the Commissioner) Look sir. Let us explain-

COMMISSIONER

(annoyed to Edith) Let me explain what.... This young man destroyed police property. He isn't even human. He's a security risk to this community. We're locking him away.

HENRY

(determined) No. You're. Not.

(Edith hears Henry's determination to refuse. The Commissioner gets annoyed)

COMMISSIONER
(annoyed, to Henry) EXCUSE ME??

(Henry remains determined, to not be separated from his grandmother)

HENRY
(to Commissioner) You will not EVER separate me from my grandmother. She means EVERYTHING TO ME.

(The Commissioner becomes angry at Henry)

COMMISSIONER
(angrily at Henry) That Goddamn Police Station meant everything to me, you goddamn freak.

(The Commissioner pinches Henry's back, with the tip of the gun. Henry groans. Edith becomes frantic whilst looking at her grandson)

COMMISSIONER
(angrily to Henry) And I'm suing you young man. And you're getting locked up. Now get up.

(Henry moves closer to his grandmother. Edith panics for what the outcome of his grandson will be. Henry hugs his grandmother tightly, and whispers to her)

HENRY
(whispers to Edith) I'm sorry Grandma. I'm sorry. Sorry for this.

(Edith panics for her grandson. The Commissioner becomes furious at Henry)

COMMISSIONER
(furious to Henry) UP. NOW.

(Henry refuses and hugs his grandmother tightly, not wanting to let go. The Commissioner pulls the trigger at Henry's shoulder. Henry screams and groans, Edith cries as Henry groans in pain. Henry refuses to let go of his grandmother. Henry groans from his shoulder wound)

COMMISSIONER
(furious to Henry) NOW. GET UP.

(Henry groans, and breathes)

EDITH

(whispers to Henry) Henry. Your shoulder.

(Henry groans and whispers to his grandmother)

HENRY

(groans) Grandma. I. I will never leave you. I will die here if I have to.

(Edith cries of Henry's sacrifice. The Commissioner becomes impatient with Henry)

COMMISSIONER

(to all four) THAT'S IT. GET HIM-

(The Deputy Commissioner and the Assistant Commissioner grab Henry's arms and drag him back. Henry groans in anger as he gets dragged back from his grandmother, Edith watches her grandson groan as he fights back. Henry uses his strength to wiggle his arms out hard. Henry breaks free, the Deputy Commissioner grabs Henry's arms yet again, the Assistant Commissioner chokeholds Henry. Henry groans, and breathes in anger. Edith fears for her grandson)

EDITH

(begs Commissioner) STOP THIS. Please. Let me explain. Let me explain.

(Henry engulfs in flames. The Commissioner witnesses Henry's true power and is shocked. The Deputy Commissioner screams in agony as Henry's arms burn up in flames. Henry pushes the Deputy down and repeatedly punches him in anger; the deputy becomes unconscious moments later. Henry screams at the unconscious Deputy. The Assistant Commissioner falls with his burning hand and shoots Henry in the shoulder. Henry groans, grabs the Commissioner's arm and breaks it in anger. The Assistant Commissioner groans, Henry punches him out in the face. The other two policemen run away, the Commissioner is not pleased.

The Commissioner pulls out a massive assault rifle, and aims it at Henry's chest. Henry looks angrily at the Commissioner (chokeholding his grandmother)

COMMISSIONER

(shocked) I must say. You are a very powerful being.

(The Commissioner steps backward; still chokeholding Edith, and aiming the gun at Henry's chest. Henry moves forward)

COMMISSIONER

(shocked) Too powerful for the police force really. You truly are a freak of nature. I uh. I must say.

(Henry is still inflamed, the Commissioner notices Henry's fiery body)

COMMISSIONER

(to Henry) So much power. So much.

(Henry looks angrily at the Commissioner. Henry starts the attack - the Commissioner shoots Henry in the elbow. Henry screams in pain, and attacks the Commissioner - pushing him down. Henry screams in pain and anger, the Commissioner punches Henry. Henry grits his teeth at the Commissioner, and grabs the gun with his mouth and throws it away. Henry bites the Commissioner's cheeks like a carnivore. Henry screams in anger, and punches the Commissioner in the face, knocking him out until unconscious. Henry looks at his grandmother, injured, inflamed and upset. Edith worries for her grandson)

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. It's all over. It's all over. It's okay.

(Henry sits up with his knees and his hands on the ground, completely inflamed. Henry cries)

HENRY

(inflamed, cries to Edith) As long as you're safe. That's. It's all that matters to me. All that matters.

(Henry breathes, and dissipates the flames off his body - the way his grandmother taught him. Henry looks at his grandmother, and stands up. Edith worries for her grandson. Henry holds out his hand to his grandmother. Edith takes her grandmother's hand, Henry groans in pain, and helps his grandmother up. Henry immediately hugs his grandmother, wounded with bullet wounds)

EDITH
(worried, to Henry) Henry. You're wounded.

(Henry groans in pain, and continues hugging his grandmother)

HENRY
(groans to Edith) As long as you're safe
Grandma. As long as you're safe.

(Edith worries about her grandson.
Henry stops hugging his
grandmother)

HENRY
(to Edith) Let's get out of here.

EDITH
(to Henry) Henry. You're in no shape to walk
anywhere. I've got to call Fred.

HENRY
(to Edith) Grandma. Fred hates me. He hates
me.

EDITH
(to Henry) Henry. Don't worry about him. He
will help. He will. Let's get you to lay
down. I'll call Fred.

(Henry obeys his grandmother, and
lays down on his back in complete
agony. Edith dials Fred's phone
number on her phone.

INT. TAYLOR GENERAL HOSPITAL

(Fred is at the hospital, at work
as a surgeon, on his break. Fred
notices Edith's number ringing.
Fred is shocked; having not heard
from Edith in quite some time.
Fred picks the phone up and
answers it)

Made in Highland

FRED
(on phone) Hello.

(Edith can hear the noises of the hospital via the phone. Nurses and surgeons walk past)

EDITH
(on phone) I know you're at work Fred. I know you're busy. But Henry is severely hurt. I was wondering - if you could please come down and help.

FRED
(on phone) Edith. I'm at work. I'm due to go back. I'm on my break. What.. What is Henry injured from?

EDITH
(cries on phone) He's been injured Fred. He's been shot. Please.

FRED
(on phone) My Goodness Edith. It's not common courtesy to just pack up as a surgeon. I've got other patients to who need me.

EDITH
(on phone) Is there someone who can take your shift or something?? Please.

FRED
(on phone) Edith. I don't even want to see Henry. After that day at the restaurant - he was out of control.

EDITH
(saddened on phone) Please Fred. Please. I will pay you if I have to.

(Fred refuses to be paid, and agrees)

FRED
(annoyed on phone) Fine. I'll be there. I'll get someone else to take my shift for an hour. But then I'm going back.

(Edith is relieved)

EDITH
(relieved on phone) Thank you Fred. Thank you. Beth would be happy.

FRED
(on phone) Where are you?

EDITH

(on phone) Taylor River. Near the swimming holes.

FRED

(annoyed; on phone) Done. I'll be there.

(Fred hangs up the phone. Fred notices his team another surgeon needs to take his shift for 1 hour, due to emergency reasons. Another surgeon takes Fred's shift, Fred makes his way to Edith's location with an emergency first aid kit in his backpack.)

INT. TAYLOR RIVER

(Fred arrives at Taylor River. Minutes later, he arrives at Edith's & Henry's location. Edith is standing up, notices Fred, Fred notices a shirtless, severely wounded Henry. Fred dislikes Henry, and doesn't talk to him much in a caring voice)

FRED

(annoyed, to Henry) Henry. Are you going to control yourself?

(Henry notices Fred's annoyed tone of voice, and realises he hates him after the incident at the restaurant. Henry looks up at Fred, whilst laying down, and nods his head)

HENRY

(worried, to Henry) Yes. Yes.

(Henry groans. Fred bends down, and takes out his emergency first aid kit from his backpack. Henry groans, Fred surgically removes both bullet shrapnels from Henry's shoulder. Henry screams in agony. Henry continues to scream in agony; as Fred surgically removes the bullet shrapnel from Henry's elbow. The procedure is done. Henry cries and murmurs his grandmother to be by his side. Edith sits down by Henry's side, holding his hand)

HENRY
(groaning to Edith) Grandma. Grandma.

EDITH
(holds Henry's hand) It's okay. It's okay
Henry. We had to get that out.

(Henry groans and looks at the sky. Edith continues holding Henry's hand. Fred holds Henry's elbow, analysing it, ensuring the bullet shrapnel is fully removed. Fred stops holding Henry's elbow. Fred pulls out antibiotics and painkillers, Edith notices)

FRED
(instructs Edith) Righto Edith. Henry needs to take these painkillers 2 times a day. To alleviate the pain and reduce infection.

EDITH
(understands Fred) Yes. No worries.

(Henry puts his elbow on his stomach. Henry sits up with his knees up, and looks at Fred)

HENRY
(groans) Thank you Fred.

(Fred doesn't like Henry, but accepts the apology)

EDITH
(to Henry) Thank you Fred. I really appreciate it.

FRED
(to Edith) No worries. Now I've really got to get back to work. Look after yourselves.

(Fred makes his way back to work. A groaning, healing Henry stands up and holds out his hand to Edith. Edith takes Henry's hand, Henry holds Edith up. Henry hugs his grandmother. Edith worries about Henry)

EDITH
(hugging Henry) It's okay. It's okay.

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly)

HENRY
 (hugging Edith) Thank you for holding my hand. I love you.

EDITH
 (hugging Henry) I love you to Henry. Never ever forget it-

(Edith stops hugging Henry. Henry looks at his grandmother, smiles as he watches her)

EDITH
 (to Henry) Let's go elsewhere. Let's find somewhere else to stay for the night.

(Henry looks around at all the unconscious policemen he injured. Henry obeys Edith's wishes, wanting to hide to keep his grandmother safe)

HENRY
 (to Edith) Yes Grandma. Let's. Let's go.

(Henry picks all the shopping bags up. Edith follows Henry's pathway to a new secure location. It begins to rain, Henry finds an abandoned hut)

HENRY
 (identifies abandoned hut) Grandma. What's this?? This could be the place.

(Henry puts down the shopping bags. Henry opens the door to the abandoned hut in the middle of bushland; nothing is inside. An abandoned hut, with nothing but shelter. Henry is pleased with the location; and looks at his grandmother)

HENRY
 (to Edith) This is the place Grandma. This is the place. Inside.

 INT. ABANDONED HUT - TAYLOR RIVER

(Henry picks the shopping bags up, Edith follows Henry inside. Henry waits for Edith to come inside; Henry closes the door tight. Henry smiles as he looks at his grandmother)

EDITH
(pleased to Henry) Good searching Mister.

(Henry chuckles and smiles, and becomes stronger around his grandmother. Henry smiles, puts down the shopping bags; and stands by his grandmother's side. Edith notices Henry's smile)

EDITH
(smiles at Henry) That's what I want to see. You smile.

(Henry smiles at his grandmother; pleased to be by her side. Henry smiles and builds his strength around her. Edith looks around the abandoned hut, and adores its interior)

EDITH
(to Henry) This place is very nice Henry. We could turn this into an actual house.

HENRY
(stands by Edith's side) Our next house, we could. Our next house.

EDITH
(to Henry) Yes. We could. We could.

(Meanwhile, Bobby follows Edith to the location - wanting to be friends with Edith - and apologise for his past interventions with using her grandson to kill her)

HENRY
(looks at Edith) I would really like that Grandma. Our next home. Our next home.

EDITH
(smiles) Exciting now, isn't it.

(Henry becomes excited, and hugs his grandmother. Edith strokes Henry's hair, Henry hugs his grandmother tightly)

EDITH

(smiles to Henry) You love your hugs now, don't you??

HENRY

(chuckles to Fred) I love being around you. I could hug you all day.

(Edith chuckles at Henry. Henry doesn't want to let go)

EDITH

(smiles to Henry) Oh I know you could. I know you could Mister.

(Henry chuckles, and stops hugging his grandmother. Meanwhile, Bobby looks from outside and wants to talk to Edith; waiting for Henry to leave. Bobby notices how protective Henry is of his grandmother, and how much she makes him happy)

HENRY

(smiles to Edith) Sit down Grandma. Sit down.

EDITH

(to Henry) Yes. I might. I might just do that Mister.

(Edith takes a seat with her shopping bags. Henry watches his grandmother in awe, and sits beside her)

EDITH

(looks at Henry) You're so happy Henry. That makes me happy.

(Henry chuckles)

HENRY

(looks at Edith) You are EVERYTHING-

EDITH

(to Henry) I know I am to you. I know... Try on these other clothes please for me.

HENRY

(looks at Edith) Okay Grandma. Okay.

(Edith hands Henry the plain white t-shirt she purchased for him. Henry puts it on himself, the shirt appears too big on Henry)

EDITH
(chuckles) Well that shirt is two sizes too big.

(Thunder cracks. Henry worries about his grandmother's safety, even though its thunder. Edith can see Henry worrying)

EDITH
(assures Henry) Henry. Henry. It's okay. You can't control thunder.

HENRY
(worried) Yeah I know. It's just. I. I just-

EDITH
(reassures Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay.

(Henry nods his head at his grandmother. Henry looks down at the massive plain white tshirt)

HENRY
(chuckles to Edith) And yes. It is two sizes too big.

(Henry takes the plain white tshirt off. Henry smiles at his grandmother, Edith hands Henry the graphic green tshirt. Henry tries it on, and fits perfectly. Henry looks down at the shirt, and is comfortable in it)

HENRY
(to Edith) It fits good Grandma. So. Damn. Good.

EDITH
(to Henry) Yes it does. Now try these on.

(Edith pulls out the green joggers, and hands them to Henry. Henry tries the joggers on his feet, and smiles at his grandmother whilst doing so. Henry falls on his back and laughs)

EDITH
(laughs at Henry) You're a bit drunk there are you Mister.

HENRY
(laughs whilst laying down) Yes. Very drunk. Very.

(Henry sits back up and puts the joggers comfortably on. Edith presses hard on the top of the left jogger, feeling Henry's foot, ensuring it is a comfortable fit. Henry looks down at the joggers)

EDITH
(looks at joggers) They are a comfortable fit, aren't they?

(Henry nods his head. Thunder cracks again, Henry worries. Edith notices)

EDITH
(reassures Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay.

(Henry takes the graphic green tshirt off, and hands it to his grandmother. Henry looks at the ceiling, worried about the thunder)

HENRY
(worried) I just want you safe Grandma.

EDITH
(reassures Henry) I am okay. You will protect me-

HENRY
(worried) Of course. Of course.

(Henry is still in his police trousers, having worn them for the last three days. Edith notices)

EDITH
(to Henry) And tomorrow. I want you out of those trousers. You're going to stink very soon.

(Henry chuckles and agrees)

HENRY
(chuckles) I know. I've worn them for the last three days-

EDITH
(to Henry) Yes. Well that's what you need to do tomorrow.

HENRY
(chuckles) Yes ma'am.

(Moments pass)

EDITH

(to Henry) Well Henry. I think I'm off. I'm tired, I need some sleep.

HENRY

(smiles) Please make sure you get a nice sleep.

EDITH

(to Henry) I will Henry. You do to.

HENRY

(worried, to Edith) I don't sleep Grandma. I'm too scared to. I don't want to have a bad dream, and I freak out.

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. If you do feel like you're in a bad dream, wake me up and I can help calm you down.

(Henry is touched by his grandmother's support)

HENRY

(worried, to Edith) But I don't want to wake you up.

EDITH

(assures Henry) Henry. It's fine. Not panicking is the key. If you panic, you're going to freak out and do destruction. Let me calm you down. It's going to be okay.

HENRY

(fearful, to Edith) Okay Grandma. Okay. I'm just afraid of my body.

EDITH

(reassures Henry) Henry. It's okay. Remember. It's a thing of mind over matter. It's gonna be fine.

(Edith puts her heart on Henry's bare chest, feeling his heartbeat. Henry is touched by his grandmother's caring love)

EDITH

(hand on Henry's chest) Nothing will ever happen. This heart here. Wants to protect me. Keep me safe.

(Henry cries by Edith's touching words)

EDITH

(hand on Henry's chest) You are not a monster. You are my saviour. And I love you very much.

(Henry holds his grandmother's hand on his chest; touched by Edith's caring words. Henry cries)

EDITH
(worried) What's wrong?

HENRY
(cries) You're so kind Grandma. You really do love me.

EDITH
(reassures Henry) Of course I do Henry. Your mother does to, even though she's not here with us.

HENRY
(cries) Your love for me. Makes me strong. And I... I love you.

(Edith is touched)

EDITH
(loving) Goodnight Henry. And I love you to.

(Edith lays down. Minutes later, Edith falls asleep. Henry with great strength, looks at his grandmother. Henry stands up and sleeps metres away from her; keeping her safe from any potential fire outbursts from his body. Henry lays down on his back, and thinks of his grandmother's words. Henry cries with love and strength. Thunder cracks, Henry sits up in fear. Thunder cracks again, Henry scans the room for danger in fear - and looks at his grandmother metres away. Henry closes his eyes, and thinks of his grandmother's words. Henry lays back down. Minutes later, he falls asleep. Bobby sleeps in hiding, next to the hut. THE NEXT MORNING, Henry wakes up, Edith is sound asleep. Henry stands up, and notices his sleeping grandmother. Henry stands up, and crosses his arms. Henry grabs the shopping bag beside his grandmother, and pulls out his black shorts. Henry goes outside and changes into the black shorts. Henry breathes and picks his dirty police trousers up, and takes them inside the hut, placing them on his side of the hut.

Henry wishes to hunt for food for his grandmother and himself, and looks at his sleeping grandmother. Moments later, Henry closes the hut door tight. Bobby watches from a distance, as Henry runs into the forest; barechested and barefoot. Moments later, Bobby enters the hut, pushes it with force open. Bobby the dwarf, is wearing a green tuxedo suit, with black loafers. Bobby looks at Edith, and tries to wake her up; wiggling her. Edith wakes up in shock)

EDITH
(waking up) Henry. What? What... is??

(Edith notices Bobby, and is shocked)

EDITH
(scared) BOBBY. What? What are you doing here?

BOBBY
(worried) Edith. Quick. Before Henry comes and beats me up again.

(Edith is shocked from a rude awakening)

BOBBY
(worried, to Edith) Look. I'm sorry um.

EDITH
(shocked) What??

BOBBY
(worried, to Edith) The accident at the police station. There's more to the story. There's more-

(Edith searches for her grandson, and worries)

EDITH
(worried) Where's Henry?? Where is he?

BOBBY
(to Edith) I saw him run into the forest.

EDITH
(worried) He's probably gone for a swim.

BOBBY
(worried) Edith. Please. Please listen.

(Edith fully awakens, and listens to Bobby)

BOBBY

(confesses) I uh. I use to work for Vince.
His sick father.

EDITH

(to Bobby) Yes. He's evil.

BOBBY

(confesses) But when he told Henry to kill
me, in return for saving you - I realised my
mistake. I uh. I shouldn't have been with
that Vince. That evil bastard-

EDITH

(shocked) Oh My.

BOBBY

(amazed) Your grandson is amazing. His
power. His strength. How do you get on his
good side?

INT. WILD BUSHLAND - TAYLOR RIVER

(Meanwhile, Henry is walking
through the forest - it is heavily
raining. Henry ignites his hand in
flames, Henry's barefeet gets
muddy from walking along the wet,
muddy grass. Henry scans the
environment for prey, Henry
breathes and looks for prey.
Meanwhile, a large possum appears
out of nowhere; Henry falls on his
back on the muddy grass. Henry
screams in anger, becoming a
predator to the possum; the possum
scratches Henry's chest hard.
Henry screams at the possum;
handles it; and burns the possum
to death, with his fiery hands.
Henry watches the possum scream as
it burns to death. The screaming
of the possum upsets Henry, Henry
crawls backwards in shock - and
regrets killing the possum.
Henry's back is damp and muddy,
and cries with regret)

HENRY

(cries to dead possum) I'm sorry possum. I.
I shouldn't have killed you like that. I
shouldn't have-

(Henry stands up, and picks the
dead possum up.

Henry cries in terror; as he remembers the screaming death of his prey. Henry shakes his head. Henry walks his muddy feet back to the abandoned hut. Back to the abandoned hut, Bobby continues apologising to Edith)

INT. ABANDONED HUT - TAYLOR RIVER

BOBBY

(apologises) I'm sorry Edith. I'd like to be on your team. I won't switch back ever again. Your team. I'm in.

EDITH

(worried, to Bobby) Bobby. I don't think so. You can't be trusted.

BOBBY

(to Edith) I'm sorry. I'm sorry... Your grandson saved my life so I could save yours. And I honour that... Please.

(Henry returns to the abandoned hut; with the dead possum on his back. Henry realises someone is in the tent, with his grandmother; and is not happy. Henry puts the dead possum on the ground; Henry forcefully enters the hut door; and glares at Bobby. Bobby panics)

BOBBY

(panics) Henry. Woah. Woah. Let me explain.

(Henry circles Bobby inside the hut. Edith watches Henry protect her)

BOBBY

(panics) Look. Your grandma and I. Just had a peaceful conversation. No harm done. No harm. I didn't hurt her. I didn't hurt her shirtless-

(Henry doesn't like Bobby's name-calling. Henry jumps in, and grabs Bobby by the tuxedo suit and drags him out of the hut. Bobby screams. Edith worries about what Henry is going to do, and stands up, making her way outside)

BOBBY

(panics) Woah Henry. I didn't do anything. I didn't.

Made in Highland

HENRY
 (angrily to Bobby) My Grandma means everything to me. EVERY THING. NOW STAY AWAY FROM HER. GOT IT.

BOBBY
 (panics) I didn't hurt her Henry. I know she means everything. I know. I know you're very protective of her. I know that-

HENRY
 (angrily to Bobby) If you ever HURT HER. EVER. I WILL HURT YOU SO BAD.

BOBBY
 (begs Henry) Okay God. Okay. I will listen God.

(Henry doesn't like being called "God" - as he doesn't like being treated as superior to others)

HENRY
 (angrily) STOP CALLING ME THAT-

(Bobby panics and kneels down, obeying Henry like a master)

HENRY
 (angrily) STOP DOING THAT.

(Edith grabs Henry's hand. Henry immediately calms down as he notices his grandmother holding his hand. Henry gulps, and hugs his grandmother - attempting to calm down)

EDITH
 (hugging Henry) I will deal with him Henry. I will-

HENRY
 (cries, hugging Edith) If he hurts you - I will so badly hurt him.

EDITH
 (hugging Henry) I know. I know. Go inside and calm down.

(Henry obeys his grandmother, and heads inside the hut. Meanwhile, Bobby notices Edith is emotionally powerful when it comes to Henry)

BOBBY
 (amazed) And you're his master??

EDITH

(to Bobby) Look Bobby. Henry doesn't like being treated like a superior. Or some King, Emperor, God, whatever. Henry just wants to be treated like a normal citizen. Alright. Please respect that.

BOBBY

(amazed) But he is a very powerful being. He really is a God.

EDITH

(to Bobby) Again Bobby. Henry doesn't like it. You need to respect that.

BOBBY

(listens to Edith) Righto.

EDITH

(to Bobby) Even those gestures. Bowing before your master, king, emperor. All that crap. Don't do that. Understand.

BOBBY

(listens to Edith) It's hard not to. But okay.

EDITH

(to Bobby) Respect my grandson. Please.

BOBBY

(to Henry) Yes. Yes I will.

EDITH

(to Bobby) I'm not sure if you saw. But Henry has got food. Are you hungry??

BOBBY

(to Edith) Yes. I saw. I would like some. Yes please.

EDITH

(to Bobby) Okay. But after your meal, leave us. For the moment, wait here.

(Edith returns inside, Bobby ignores Edith and hides behind the tree outside. Henry sits on his side of the hut, and looks up at his grandmother. And smiles)

EDITH

(smiles) What are you smiling at Mister?

HENRY

(smiles) You. All. The. Damn. Time.

(Henry smiles at his grandmother, and stands up. Henry hugs his grandmother)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) I see you've hunted for food.

HENRY

(hugging Edith) A possum. For us. Should last us for a few days.

EDITH

(hugging Henry) Yes it should. Thank you Mister.

(Henry smiles. Edith stops hugging his grandmother)

EDITH

(to Henry) Shall we cook this up now?

HENRY

(nods head) Yes. But...

(Henry realises he has no matches. Edith realises something is wrong)

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. What's the matter?

HENRY

(concerned) Matches. How are we? How are we supposed-

(Edith points at Henry)

EDITH

(to Henry) You Mister.

(Henry panics in fear. Edith notices)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Henry. It's okay. It's okay. We shall do it together. It's okay. It's going to be okay.

HENRY

(panics, to Edith) Okay. Okay. As long as you're there with me. As long as you're there. I'm. I'm scared. Everytime I use it. Everytime-

EDITH

(comforts Henry) It's going to be fine. It's going to be fine.

HENRY

(hugs Edith) For you Grandma. For you. I will use my abilities only when you want me to.

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly, and lets go moments later)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Come on. Let's go confront your fears.

INT. OUTSIDE ABANDONED HUT

(Henry breathes, and walks beside his grandmother. Minutes later, Henry & Edith are outside. Bobby hides behind a tree, overlooking Henry & Edith - without Henry's knowledge. Minutes later, Edith fetches materials for the campfire - this being small twigs, grass & dry leaves; whilst Henry remains standing with his arms crossed & stressing. Moments later, Bobby watches Henry sit down with his legs crossed, and Edith sits down beside him on a log bench. Henry breathes and looks scared at his grandmother. Edith comforts him)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay.

(Henry breathes and looks at his grandmother. Henry breathes once more)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Now. When I say on, you're going to ignite in flames.

HENRY

(nods head, cries) Okay. Okay.

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Henry. It's okay. You're not going to hurt me. I trust you Henry. I trust you-

HENRY

(scared, to Edith) Grandma. I'm scared of my ability. Myself. I don't want this ability to go crazy and hurt you.

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Henry. It won't. I promise. I promise. Look at me.

(Edith puts her hand on Henry's bare chest; feeling his heartbeat. Henry holds his grandmother's hand on his chest; lightened by her words)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) You're not going to hurt me. Because I know your heart won't let you hurt me.

(Henry cries at his grandmother's words, of trust and hope. Henry nods and breathes. Edith takes her hand off of Henry's chest. Henry prepares to ignite in flames, and breathes)

EDITH

(reassuring) Everything's going to be okay. Everything.

(Henry breathes)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Okay... On-

(Henry closes his eyes; and ignites himself in flames. Edith watches her grandson's arms, chest, and hands turn red; and light up in flames. Henry refuses to look at his inflamed self, and closes his eyes. Henry breathes.)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay. I'm here.

HENRY

(inflamed, to Edith) As long as you're here. As long as you're here. As long-

EDITH

(reassures Henry) I will always be here for you Henry. Always.

(Henry smiles at his grandmother's words. Edith watches the flames on Henry flow throughout his torso)

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. Your eyes. To light the campfire, I'm going to need your eyes open so you can light it at the direct place. And not elsewhere.

(Henry understands his grandmother, and opens his eyes. Henry notices his inflamed body, and is embarrassed. Henry immediately looks at his grandmother, minutes later)

EDITH

(reassures Henry) Don't be embarrassed of yourself Henry. Don't be embarrassed.

(Henry breathes whilst inflamed, and looks at his grandmother. Henry smiles and looks at the campfire setup)

EDITH

(directs Henry) Righto.

(Edith showcases to Henry with her hands, the campfire setup in which she has built. Henry notices it)

EDITH

(directs Henry) Now. Right. I just need you to light up where the setup is. Understand??

(Henry looks at Edith, inflamed)

HENRY

(inflamed, to Edith) I... I understand.

(Henry moves his inflamed hand towards the campfire set-up, Henry breathes. Bobby looks from behind, and is thrilled; believing Henry is a very powerful god-like being. Moments later, Henry's inflamed hand bursts out fire at the twigs, grass & dry leaves - thus creating a massive campfire flame. Edith is amazed of the height of the campfire, Henry panics and jumps backwards out of the way whilst inflamed. The large campfire flame from Henry's body brings light and heat to the area. Henry looks at his grandmother, scared of the mass flame that he has just produced.)

HENRY

(scared, to Edith) Oh No.

(Edith realises her grandson is panicking, and attempts to calm him down)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Henry. It's okay. It's okay. That's great. It's the perfect size for the prey we are cooking.

(An inflamed Henry stands up in shock, inflamed, and scared)

EDITH
(questions Henry) Henry. What are you doing?

HENRY
(inflamed, to Edith) Getting our food.

(Bobby looks in awe. Moments later, a scared Henry grabs the dead possum with his bare strength; half-cooking the dead possum with his inflamed hands. This scares Henry as he shakes his head in fear. Moments later, Henry successfully pulls out the possum towards the campfire. Henry returns to his grandmother, keeping his distance. Edith notices the half-cooked dead possum near the campfire. Edith notices a petrified, distanced, inflamed Henry)

EDITH
(comforts Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay. It's okay.

(Henry looks at his grandmother, scared)

EDITH
(comforts Henry) It's time to calm down Henry. Sit down.

(An inflamed Henry sits a far distance from his grandmother, with his knees up; keeping her safe in case of an accidental loss of control. Edith begins counselling Henry)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) Henry. Look at me. Look at me.

(An inflamed Henry looks at his grandmother, worried)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) Now. Close your eyes. Close them.

(Henry closes his eyes. Henry worries)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Breathe for me. Three deep breaths.

(Henry takes three deep breaths. He resumes listening to his grandmother)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Good. Good.

(Henry listens closely to his grandmother)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Now think of a time when you had a great time. Think of the person you had a great time with.

(Henry recounts the event he spent the time with his grandmother - laughing whilst watching a comical movie together. Henry remembers the laughs he shared with his grandmother, and smiles. The flames from Henry's body slowly begins to dissipate)

EDITH

(questions Henry) Do you remember the time Henry? Do you?

HENRY

(remembers) Yes. Yes I do.

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Goodie. Now hold that thought to memory. And breathe.

(Henry holds the thought to his memory. Henry breathes)

EDITH

(reassures Henry) You're doing well Mister. You're doing very good Henry... You're getting better and better everyday.

(This makes Henry smile)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Now tell me the great time you had with someone.

(Henry smiles as he tells his grandmother the event)

HENRY

(smiles) It was a time with you Grandma.

(Edith watches as more flames dissipate off Henry's body. She notices Henry's stomach is only inflamed)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Yeah. Where was it? What happened?

HENRY

(smiles) We... We were watching a funny movie together. You were so funny. Fun to be around that night. So damn funny.

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Oh I think I remember that. That comical movie we watched. What a funny one.

HENRY

(smiles) It was. And you were making jokes whilst we watched it. It was so funny. You were so funny that night.

(Henry chuckles. Edith notices the flames on Henry's stomach dissipate - thus Henry is no longer inflamed. Edith smiles as her counselling practice is successful. Edith smiles)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) That movie was funny... Now... Open your eyes.

(Henry opens his eyes, looks down at his bare chest, arms and hands - and realises he is no longer inflamed. Henry screams in excitement and relief; acknowledging Edith is the solution to full control of his ability)

HENRY

(excited to Edith) Grandma. You DID IT. YOU DID IT. YOU DID IT!!

(Henry crawls to his grandmother, and hugs her tightly; not

EDITH

(smiles, hugging Henry) No. You Did It Henry. You gained full control of your ability.

HENRY

(loving, hugging Edith) With your help, I did. You're my superhero-

(Edith is touched by Henry's kind words)

EDITH
(loving, to Henry) No. You're mine.

HENRY
(hugging Edith) I love you Grandma.

EDITH
(to Henry) I love you to Mister.

(With great love, Henry continues hugging his grandmother. Moments later, Edith stops hugging Edith. Henry smiles and looks at his grandmother. Bobby is in awe of Henry's powerful ability. Bobby whispers to himself, whilst hiding behind a tree)

BOBBY
(whispers to himself) He is a King. My King. Actually. An Emperor. He's more powerful than a king. Emperor Henry James Lovell. I like that.

(Bobby smiles and continues hiding behind a tree; ignoring Edith's direction. Edith looks at the half-cooked dead possum from a distance)

EDITH
(smiles) Now that looks like some half-cooked possum.

HENRY
(to Edith) Oh Grandma. That was because... when I was on fire. I held it, and my hands burnt it. I was an idiot.

EDITH
(to Henry) How are you an idiot Henry? You've half-cooked it. We just got to cook the other half. I don't want to be eating anything raw. And I'm sure you don't either.

HENRY
(shakes head) No.

(Henry continues looking at the large campfire flame he had created. Henry refuses to look at it, Edith notices)

EDITH
(to Henry) You don't like it. Do you?

HENRY

(worried, to Edith) No. It scares me. I know you like it. But I don't.

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. There is a good thing about fire.

HENRY

(Confused) Like what. All I see is destruction. And bad stuff.

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. It brings light and heat. They would have loved you back in the cavemen days. Even when they first discovered fire. You're a walking campfire.

(Henry chuckles at his grandmother's comment. Edith smiles)

HENRY

(to Edith) Well I'll only keep you warm Grandma. No one else.

EDITH

(jokes with Henry) Well that's right. Only keep me warm. Stuff everyone else.

(Henry laughs at his grandmother's comment. Edith laughs to)

HENRY

(jokes with Edith) How about stuff you to?

EDITH

(jokes with Henry) No you wouldn't.

(Edith tickles Henry's chest. Henry laughs from the tickle sensation, and falls down on his back; laughing from Edith's sense of humour)

EDITH

(jokes with Henry) You are naughty Mister. Naughty man.

(Henry chuckles in laughter, whilst laying his back down on the ground)

EDITH

(jokes with Henry) Naughty man. No food for you.

(Henry laughs as he sits up, and chuckles at his grandmother)

EDITH
(jokes with Henry) No possum for you.

(Henry stands up, and moves the dead possum away from the campfire, and near the hut. Henry laughs)

HENRY
(jokes with Edith) No. No food for you Grandma. You've been a naughty woman-

(Henry folds his arms, and laughs)

EDITH
(jokes with Henry) Naughty man. Naughty. You need a kicking I think.

(Henry chuckles)

HENRY
(jokes with Edith) No. But maybe you do-

(Edith chuckles)

EDITH
(to Henry) Okay. Enough joking. Come on and sit down.

(Henry smiles, and returns to his grandmother with the dead possum in his hands. Henry drops the dead possum, and sits beside his grandmother. Edith tickles Henry's stomach; Henry laughs from being tickled)

HENRY
(laughs) Funny. You're so funny Grandma. You. Are. The-

(Edith tickles Henry's chest again. Henry breaks into laughter from being tickled by his grandmother)

EDITH
(smiles) That's what I like to see. A happy Henry.

HENRY
(laughs) Funny. You're funny. So funny-

(15 minutes later - Edith skins the possum, and prepares a possum stew. Moments later, she cleans and quarters the dead possum in pieces.)

Minutes later, she boils the carcass in the campfire, and completes the possum stew. Edith serves Henry's serving of possum stew on a paper plate. Henry looks at his serving of possum stew, and is impressed)

HENRY
(impressed) It looks good Grandma. Good. So good.

EDITH
(serves dish herself) Yes. It sure does. Eat up Mister.

(Henry begins eating his serving of possum stew, and looks at his grandmother)

EDITH
(questions Henry) Yum?

HENRY
(eating, looks at Edith) Yummy. Thank you Grandma. Yummy.

EDITH
(smiles, to Henry) That's alright. You do the hunting. I'll do the cooking.

HENRY
(eating, looks at Edith) Okay. I will. We will do that. What should I hunt next?

EDITH
(smiles, to Henry) I think this shall last us a few days. And the next thing you should hunt... another possum. This lasts a few days.

HENRY
(eating, looks at Edith) Okay. Okay.

(Minutes later, Henry finishes his meal and burps loud. Henry laughs)

EDITH
(chuckles) Excuse you Henry.

HENRY
(chuckles) Excuse me. Sorry.

EDITH
(chuckles) You enjoyed it though. That's what matters. Gotta keep you healthy and strong.

HENRY
(smiles) You do Grandma. You do.

(Henry burps again loudly, and laughs)

EDITH
(chuckles) Henry. My Goodness-

(Henry laughs)

HENRY
(chuckles) I'm sorry. It was so good.

(Edith smiles)

EDITH
(smiles) I know. I can tell.

(Hours later, it is nighttime. Elsewhere, a pack of dingoes can smell the spare dead carcass of the possum; and seek it as food. They make their way toward Henry & Edith's location; where Henry is laying down on the ground, and Edith is seated. Meanwhile, Bobby shows himself to Edith. Edith notices Bobby, and realises she has forgotten to give him food)

EDITH
(notices Bobby) Oh. Bobby. I forgot. Your food. Hang on.

(Henry hears the name "Bobby," and is not pleased he is in the same area his grandmother and himself are in)

HENRY
(questions Edith) Grandma. Who?

(Edith stands up, and grabs a serving of spare possum stew. Henry stands up, concerned, and scans the environment for Bobby with his eyes. Minutes later, Bobby makes himself seen by Henry. Henry is not happy and stands up, with his fists tightened. Bobby worries of Henry's aggravation towards him)

BOBBY
(worried, to Henry) Woah. Henry. Henry. Hey. Hey.

HENRY
 (annoyed to Bobby) I THOUGHT I TOLD YOU TO
 LEAVE-

BOBBY
 (worried, to Henry) Henry. I want to make it
 up to you. I'm sorry. I'm sorry for what
 happened.

EDITH
 (worried, to Henry) Henry. Henry. Bobby told
 me what he did.

HENRY
 (cries to Edith) How he saved you from me?

EDITH
 (comforts Henry) No Henry. Don't ever think
 like that. Don't ever think like that. Your
 father caused that incident. He did. (points
 at Bobby) What Bobby did was wrong, I know.
 But he did still save me.

(Henry becomes frustrated and
 upset, and wishes to explain more
 of his situation to his
 grandmother)

HENRY
 (upset, to Edith) I COULDN'T SAVE YOU
 BECAUSE I WAS DANGEROUS AT THE TIME. (points
 at Bobby) HE WAS WORKING WITH DAD. HE WAS-

EDITH
 (worried, to Henry) I know. I know.

HENRY
 (upset, to Edith) I TOLD BOBBY TO SAVE YOU
 BECAUSE I COULDN'T. BUT HE WAS WORKING WITH
 DAD. HE PLAYED A ROLE IN ME LOSING CONTROL.
 UNTIL DAD TOLD ME TO KILL HIM. THEN BOBBY
 CHANGED HIS MIND.

BOBBY
 (worried, to Henry) Henry... I....

(Bobby steps backwards and fears
 the worse)

HENRY
 (upset, to Edith) DAD SAID EITHER I KILL HIM
 AND SAVE YOU, OR I SAVE HIM AND YOU WILL BE
 KILLED. I DIDN'T WANT YOU KILLED GRANDMA...
 SO I HAD TO LOSE CONTROL, AND I HAD TO HOPE.
 (points at Bobby) JUST BLOODY HOPE HE WOULD
 SAVE YOU AND NOT BETRAY ME. I HAD TO BEG
 HIM. AND I STILL DIDN'T TRUST HIM-

EDITH
(worried, to Henry) I know. I know.

HENRY
(upset, to Edith) I DON'T LIKE (points at Bobby) HIM ONE BIT. I DON'T LIKE HIM.

BOBBY
(worried, to Henry) But I did save her Henry. Didn't I??

HENRY
(angrily, to Bobby) ONLY WHEN YOU WERE THREATENED. ONLY WHEN I WAS TOLD TO KILL YOU TO SAVE HER. THAT WAS THE ONLY REASON. ONLY FRIGGIN REASON-

(Henry engulfs himself in flames. Bobby looks in awe at Henry's ability. Henry looks down at his inflamed chest, and covers his chest with his arms; embarrassed. Henry turns his back. Edith worries for Henry)

EDITH
(worried) Henry. I. I'm sorry. I-

(Bobby is still in awe of Henry's powerful ability)

BOBBY
(in awe) Amazing. Emperor Henry James Lovell.

(Henry doesn't like being called an 'Emperor;' Edith is not impressed by Bobby's comments and glares at him)

EDITH
(concerned) Look Henry. I--

(An upset Henry runs to Taylor River, and takes a dive. The river water washes down Henry's flames. Henry lifts his head up on the water, and swims 100m away; deeply upset, wanting space. Meanwhile, Edith is saddened by Henry's heartbreak. Bobby is left concerned)

BOBBY
(concerned) Edith. I... I...

EDITH
(saddened) Please leave. Just take your meal and go. Just go.

(Bobby takes his serving of possum stew, and ignores Edith's plea. Bobby hides behind a tree; overlooking Edith and eating his serving of possum stew. Edith sits down by the campfire, and puts the spare possum stew away. Moments later, she hears growling and looks ahead. She sees the shadow of four dingoes. Edith worries)

EDITH
(worries to herself) Oh no. No.

(Bobby notices the dingoes, and is concerned for Edith's safety. He finishes his meal quickly, and watches over Edith. Moments later, the dingoes front Edith and growl at her)

EDITH
(scared, to dingoes) No food here. Stay away. Stay. Stay-

(The dingoes continue to growl at Edith. Bobby jumps out of nowhere with a large, bulky stick and waves it at the dingoes)

BOBBY
(to dingoes) EH. Leave the old lady alone. Leave her alone-

(The dingoes growl at Bobby louder. A frightened Edith grabs the spare possum stew in a container, and walks backwards. Two dingoes attack Bobby, Bobby screams as he falls to the ground, and is bitten on the forehead and neck. Bobby screams, Edith hides in the hut. Two dingoes chase Edith in the hut, Edith screams as the two dingoes push Edith down with her paws. A petrified Edith screams in fear. The other two dingoes by Bobby's side, join the other two inside the hut. An injured Bobby tries to stand up, but struggles due to his wounds. The two dingoes scratch Edith's face, Edith screams. Edith screams as the dingoes bite Edith's knees hard, scratching them both - resulting in massive bloodshed on Edith's knees.

The dingoes continue biting Edith's cheeks, Edith screams. 5 minutes later - Henry returns from his 100m swim in Taylor River. Henry stands up and exits the river; completely drenched. Henry hops out of the river, and can not see his grandmother by the campfire. Henry panics, Bobby notices Henry. Bobby fronts Henry, Henry is not pleased to see Bobby lying on his stomach, injured)

BOBBY

(groaning to Henry) Henry. I. I ah...

HENRY

(concerned) Where is Grandma?

BOBBY

(groaning to Henry) Look I uh. The dingoes. The dingoes have attacked her. They're... They're still attacking her.

(Henry and Bobby hear Edith scream. Henry screams in shock; regretting he had left after his outcry)

HENRY

(scared) Grandma. Grandma.

BOBBY

(groaning to Henry) In the hut. Go, go, go.

(Henry runs inside the hut, and notices four dingoes finishing their brunch of the spare possum stew Edith had saved. Edith is unconscious, Henry becomes aggravated by the dingoes' assault on his grandmother. Two dingoes notice Henry and growl at him. Henry grits his teeth at the dingoes, the dingoes growl at Henry. Moments later, two dingoes push Henry down on his back with their paws - Henry retaliates by kicking one to the side of the hut, and breaking the other's legs with his hands. Both dingoes whine in agony, Henry stands up and screams at both dingoes in anger. Another dingo pushes Henry back down on his back. Henry grabs both of the dingo's legs and burns them, the dingo whines in agony.

Another bites Henry's cheeks, Henry screams - grabs that dingo, and breaks its legs. Another dingo scratches Henry's chest repeatedly, Henry screams and burns the dingo by his chest. That dingo dies. A groaning Henry stands up, and grits his teeth at the remaining dingoes - the dingoes leave Henry in fear. Moments later - Henry notices his unconscious grandmother, injured, with both knees bleeding. Henry bends down to his grandmother)

HENRY

(cries) Grandma. Grandma.

(Bobby watches Henry cry at his grandmother's side)

HENRY

(cries) Grandma. I... I shouldn't have left. I shouldn't have left. I shouldn't have.

(Henry cries deeply. He wiggles his grandma in hope she will wake up from her coma)

HENRY

(cries) Grandma. Grandma.

(Bobby stands behind Henry)

BOBBY

(saddened) I'm sorry Henry. I. I'm-

(Henry turns his head and looks angrily at Bobby. Henry ignites his hand in flames, and shoots fire at Bobby every time he ducks, hoping his aim would be right, but misses every time. Henry grunts in anger)

HENRY

(angrily) I TOLD YOU TO GET OUT OF HERE.

(Bobby hides behind a tree from Henry, but admires Henry as Emperor Henry Lovell. Henry can not see Bobby)

HENRY

(angrily) I KNOW YOU'RE THERE SOMEWHERE.

(Bobby is excited, watching Henry walk with his inflamed hands. Henry circles the area, searching for Bobby but can not locate him)

HENRY
 (angrily) LEAVE THIS AREA. WILL YOU...
 LEAVE...

(Henry shoots fire from his hand at the tree, where Bobby is hiding. The trunk of the tree bursts into flames, the whole tree falls down and burns. Bobby jumps away from the fire, and makes himself seen by Henry. Henry grabs Bobby by the tshirt, and pushes him down on the ground with his other hand. Henry lifts his inflamed hand in the air, ready to attack)

BOBBY
 (petrified) Henry. I'm sorry. I'm sorry. I'm sorry-

HENRY
 (annoyed) I WANT YOU TO LEAVE. I WANT YOU TO LEAVE-

BOBBY
 (petrified) But Henry. But Henry-

HENRY
 (annoyed) WHAT??

BOBBY
 (petrified) When I was in the army, I was a medical officer... No doctor. But a medical officer. I can try to see if I can help Edith.

(Henry thinks about Bobby's request to help his grandmother. He reluctantly agrees)

HENRY
 (annoyed) FINE. But if you hurt my Grandma, I will hurt you so DAMN BAD.

(Henry stands up. Bobby looks at Henry's skinny but muscular physique up close, and his inflamed hand; treating him like an emperor)

BOBBY
 (petrified) Okay Emperor. At your service-

HENRY
 (annoyed) STOP CALLING ME THAT-

(Henry tries to kick Bobby. Bobby crawls out of the way, concerned about what Henry will do to him)

BOBBY
(concerned) Okay. Okay.

(Henry leaves Bobby. Bobby stands up, and walks toward an unconscious Edith. Henry bends down towards his grandmother, Bobby bends down toward Edith. Henry cries in sadness, Bobby sees how important Edith is to Henry)

BOBBY
(concerned) She's very important to you, isn't she?

(Henry ignores Bobby, and continues crying at his grandmother's side. Bobby medically analyses an unconscious Edith; and finds two deeply, wounded, bloodshed of knees. He also identifies scratches on Edith's face, and bite marks on Edith's cheeks)

BOBBY
(concerned) My God. She's injured Henry. Like very.

(Henry cries at the news, but ignores Bobby once again)

BOBBY
(concerned) I'll do my best.

HENRY
(cries) I shouldn't have left. I should not have left-

BOBBY
(saddened) I'm sorry Henry. I'm sorry.

HENRY
(cries) I... I would've killed all four of those dingoes if stayed here... I'm such an idiot... Now Grandma is hurt.

BOBBY
(saddened) I'm sorry.

HENRY
(cries) It would have been scary for her. I wish I was here. I wish I was here.

(Henry punches the ground, his fists turn red. Bobby notices Henry's red fist, but is not scared)

BOBBY
(questions Henry) Your fist Henry.

(Henry looks at his red fists, and immediately calms down. Henry breathes and talks to himself, using the practice his grandmother taught him)

HENRY
(breathes) Breathe. Breathe. Breathe.

(Henry breathes and holds his fist, and look at its red colour fade away. It fades away)

BOBBY
(amazed to Henry) Woah. Woah.

HENRY
(looks at Bobby) What?

BOBBY
(questions Henry) Can I ask a personal question?

HENRY
(looks at Bobby) What?

BOBBY
(to Henry) When you engulf in flames, what does it feel like? Some adrenaline thing. I just wonder...

(Henry ignores Bobby, not wanting to talk about his ability)

BOBBY
(to Henry) Sorry. Sorry. I was just asking.

HENRY
(saddened, to Bobby) I hate it. It... It does not feel good. I hate it. I hate how it feels.

BOBBY
(questions Henry) But how?

HENRY
(saddened, to Bobby) Just. It feels like... power.

BOBBY
(amazed, to Henry) Woah. Like an Emperor.

HENRY
(annoyed) I said to STOP CALLING ME THAT-

BOBBY
(amazed) Just saying.

(A frustrated Henry grabs Bobby by the wrist. Bobby worries)

BOBBY
(concerned) Sorry. Sorry.

(Henry keeps holding Bobby's wrist hard, and presses at it. Bobby groans)

BOBBY
(groans) Sorry shirtless-

(Henry presses Bobby's wrist harder, as he doesn't like Bobby's last comment. Bobby whines in pain)

BOBBY
(whines) Okay. Okay.

(Henry lets go of Bobby. Bobby holds his wrist, groaning in pain)

BOBBY
(groans) God. God, you're strong.

HENRY
(annoyed, to Bobby) DO THIS OR LEAVE. I WILL CALL SOMEONE ELSE-

BOBBY
(concerned) Okay. Okay Henry.

(Bobby pulls out his first aid kit from his backpack. He grabs a bottle of saline, a pad of tissues, non-adhesive sterile dressing, and a roller bandage. Henry watches Bobby clean Edith's knee wounds with saline; then dries the wounds with a pad of tissues; and then applies non-adhesive sterile dressing to the wounds. Bobby then wraps both knees with a roller bandage; allowing for healing. Bobby then applies antiseptic cream on Edith's cheek wounds. Moments later, Edith wakes up from her coma)

EDITH
(coughs, waking up) Din-go...

HENRY
(cries) Grandma. Grandma.

EDITH
(waking up) Dingo...

(Edith fully wakes up, and notices her grandson by her side)

EDITH
(concerned) Henry. Henry. You're back-

HENRY
(cries) I got back too late. I. I'm sorry. I should not have left. I shouldn't have left. I shouldn't have-

(Edith puts her hand on Henry's cheek)

EDITH
(concerned) It's okay. I want to talk to you about before though. Before you left. That made me cry-

HENRY
(cries, nods head) Okay. Okay. We will.

(Edith groans. Henry cries to see his grandmother in pain, Edith notices Henry crying)

EDITH
(concerned) It's okay Henry. It's okay--

(Henry cries)

EDITH
(concerned) What happened to those dingoes?

BOBBY
(to Edith) The Emperor killed one. And the rest ran away-

(Edith taps Henry on the chest)

EDITH
(smiles) That's my Henry-

(Henry smiles but still cries at his grandmother's pain)

EDITH
(annoyed, to Bobby) And Bobby. If you can't respect Henry, leave alright. I've told you and told you. Stop calling him Emperor, God, or King, or whatever-

(Henry agrees with his grandmother. Bobby notices Henry nodding his head in agreement)

BOBBY
(concerned, to Edith) Okay then. Righto.

EDITH
(annoyed, to Bobby) Please listen. I've told you and told you.

BOBBY
(worried, to Edith) Okay then. Okay.

(Moments later, Henry returns his attention to his wounded grandmother)

EDITH
(groaning) Damn. I think I might have scary dreams tonight. After those dingoes-

HENRY
(cries, to Edith) I wish I didn't leave. I wish I didn't.

EDITH
(concerned, to Edith) Henry. Don't. Don't think like that. You wanted space. You wanted space-

HENRY
(cries, to Edith) But how come bad things happen when I'm not here. Not here to stop them. It's not fair-

EDITH
(concerned, to Henry) You can't control fate Henry. Or whatever in life happens. It just happens-

HENRY
(cries, to Edith) It's not fair sometimes.

EDITH
(concerned, to Henry) I know. Life isn't fair sometimes. I know-

(Henry cries)

EDITH
(concerned, to Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay. And who bandaged me up?

(Henry points at Bobby, and continues crying)

EDITH
(thankful, to Bobby) Thank you Bobby.

BOBBY
(nods head) It's all good.

EDITH
(questions Bobby) Hey. Do you know what happened to the spare food? That spare possum stew-

HENRY
(concerned, to Edith) The dingoes took it.

EDITH
(to Henry) Damn. Damn. You all good to hunt tomorrow?

HENRY
(nods head, to Edith) Yes I will Grandma.

EDITH
(to Henry) Preferably not a possum. Because it attracts dingoes. Something different-

(Bobby does some thinking, and thinks of a duck)

BOBBY
(to Edith) A duck.

EDITH
(agrees, to Henry) Yeah a duck. A duck Henry. A duck will do.

HENRY
(nods head, to Edith) A duck it is.

(Edith smiles and puts her hand on Henry's cheek. Henry grabs Edith's hand and puts it on his chest, and holds her hands. Edith feels Henry's heartbeat)

EDITH
(smiles) I feel your heartbeat Henry. I feel it.

(Henry is intrigued)

HENRY
(intrigued) Really.

EDITH
(smiles) Yes.

(Henry still holds Edith's hand on his chest. Edith feels Henry's heartbeat again)

EDITH

(smiles) And again. Beating steady. That's good.

(Henry smiles. Edith takes her hand off of Henry's chest. Edith yawns)

EDITH

(groans, to Henry) Henry. I think it's time for me to go to sleep.. It's time for you to go to sleep as well-

HENRY

(concerned, to Edith) I can't sleep. I can't-

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. Like I said... if you have a dream and you engulf in flames - wake me up. I'll help you to regain control again.

(Henry looks at his grandmother with great love and honour)

HENRY

(cries to Edith) Thank you Grandma. Thank you.

EDITH

(to Henry) I will help you. Don't panic, because you'll make things worse. Don't be afraid to ask for help.

HENRY

(cries to Edith) Okay. Okay... Goodnight...

EDITH

(to Henry) Oh wait. I forgot to ask. How was your swim before?

HENRY

(to Edith) It was relaxing. I love the water. The water takes all my stress away. But I still wish I was here... I could have-

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. It's okay. Do what makes you happy and relax. It sounds like swimming is good for your mental health. So continue doing it for your mental health. Okay-

HENRY

(smiles, to Henry) Okay Grandma.

EDITH

(to Henry) Goodnight Henry. I love you very much.

HENRY

(to Edith) I love you to Grandma. Very much to. And heal up.

EDITH

(to Henry) I will. Goodnight.

(Moments later, Edith falls asleep. Henry stands up and makes his way to his side of the hut, and hops into his sleeping bag. Henry breathes, and looks at the ceiling of the hut. Bobby sleeps outside, behind another tree. THE NEXT MORNING - is the next morning. Henry wakes up 6am in the morning, and runs into the bushland - hunting for duck. Bobby watches Henry run into the forest, and follows him)

 INT. WILD BUSHLAND - TAYLOR RIVER

(Henry arrives at the bushland; Bobby watches Henry ignite his hand in flames. Bobby watches Henry trek through the long grass, searching for duck. Bobby from a distance, walks behind him and watches over him. Henry identifies a duck by the river; Henry walks slowly towards it; Henry jumps down on his knees; grabs the duck, the duck yelps in pain as Henry burns it with his bare hands. The duck dies, Henry breathes, trying to calm down. Henry breathes, stands up, and holds the dead duck in his arms. Henry treks through the long grass - a swarm of magpies attack Henry; Henry angrily drops the dead duck on the ground; lifts his inflamed hands in the air, and burns them. The magpies scream from their burns and fall down, Henry grabs the last remaining and snaps its neck in anger. Henry grunts in anger; Bobby watches in awe. Henry looks at his inflamed hands and breathes; the flames dissipate off his hands minutes later. Bobby watches Henry in awe, and trips on a piece of log on the ground. Henry hears the fall; and investigates it.

He walks around, Bobby remains down in hiding; not wanting to be seen by Henry. Bobby quietly stands up, in the hopes of fleeing back to the hut; Henry notices him and is not pleased)

HENRY
(shouting) HEY.

(Bobby notices Henry has caught him fleeing from under cover. Bobby looks at Henry)

BOBBY
(worried, to Henry) Woah Henry. Woah.

HENRY
(to Bobby) WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE?

BOBBY
(worried, to Henry) Woah. Calm down.

HENRY
(annoyed) WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE?

BOBBY
(worried, to Henry) I was looking out for you. Didn't want my Emperor getting hurt-

(Henry gets annoyed with the name-calling of "Emperor" made to him by Bobby)

HENRY
(annoyed) STOP CALLING ME THAT. UNDERSTAND-

BOBBY
(concerned) Okay. Gee. Gee-

(Bobby runs back to the hut. Henry screams in anger as Bobby runs back. Henry picks up the dead duck, and makes his way back to the hut. Edith meanwhile, is up, resting her knee wounds. Edith calls for "Henry," no response)

INT. ABANDONED HUT

EDITH
(talks to herself) Oh. He must be hunting for some duck-

(Bobby arrives back to the hut. He calls for "Edith" in a stressing voice)

BOBBY
(stressing) Edith. Edith. I- I-

EDITH
(concerned) What is it Bobby?

BOBBY
(stressing) He's pissed. He's pissed at me-

EDITH
(concerned) What? What did you do to him?

BOBBY
(stressing) Sorry. Sorry I-

(Henry arrives back to the hut, in frustration, carrying the dead duck in his arms. Moments later, Henry puts down the dead duck; and makes his way inside the hut; in search of Bobby. Henry enters the hut; and notices Bobby; and is far from happy. Suddenly, a shotgun trigger is pulled; Henry ducks runs toward Edith to protect her minutes later. It is the secret service police; having been directed to lock Henry up; after he had attacked the Commissioner and fellow policemen at Taylor Police Station. Henry bends down to Edith, Edith is frantic; freaking out)

EDITH
(concerned) What the? What's going on? What the?

BOBBY
(concerned) Shit. Shit-

(Henry looks furious at Bobby; Bobby panics)

BOBBY
(concerned) Shit-

(More gunshots are heard. Henry hugs his grandmother, with protection. Edith worries)

BOBBY
(concerned) I'm out of here. I'm out-

(Bobby leaves Henry & Edith for good, in fear of being locked up in a police cell for life.

Henry notices Bobby has left,
Henry is pleased. Henry returns
his attention to protecting his
grandmother)

HENRY

(talks to himself) Good. He's left-

(More gunshots are heard. Henry
looks around the hut; he sees a
bullet fly right past him. Henry
panics; and sacrifices himself to
protect his grandmother. Officer
Jerkins, the leader of the SSP -
enters the hut, and notices Henry
hugging his grandmother tightly;
not letting go. More secret
service police officers follow
Officer Jerkins. Officer Jerkins
loads his assault rifle up with
bullets, and aims it at Henry's
back from a distance. Henry
refuses to look at Officer
Jerkins)

OFFICER JERKINS

(to Henry) Mr. Henry James Lovell. Hands up
in the air right now.... Comply or your
grandmother is getting shot with a sniper-

(In fear, Henry puts his hands in
the air - accepting being taken
from the SSP - with the guarantee
his grandmother will be safe and
not be fatally shot. Officer
Jerkins' fellow policemen grab
Henry's hands, and handcuff him.
Officer Jenkins puts his assault
rifle away on his duty belt. Henry
cries as he looks at his
grandmother; Edith cries and
panics)

EDITH

(frantic, to Officer Jerkins) Please. My
fellow Officer. Let me explain--

OFFICER JERKINS

(serious, to Edith) Explain what. This young
man is a threat to not only the residents of
this town. But to the entire police force.
The Commissioner has been assaulted and
brutally injured by this young man, in
return of protecting you... And don't worry;
you're a suspect to.

(Edith cries. Moments later,
Officer Jerkins handcuffs Edith.
Henry screams in fear; of where
his grandmother is going)

HENRY

(screams at Officer Jerkins) Where's my Grandma going? Where is she going? WHERE?

(Officer Jerkins smashes Henry's face with a punch. Henry groans; Officer Jerkins look at Henry in a bad-tempered look)

OFFICER JERKINS

(to Henry) None of YOUR BUSINESS young man.

HENRY

(screams at Officer Jenkins) I CARE. SHE'S MY GRANDMA. YOU HEAR. MY GRANDMA. IF YOU HURT HER - I WILL-

OFFICER JERKINS

(screams at Henry) YOU WILL WHAT?

(Officer Jenkins in fury; aims his pistol at Henry's face. Henry grabs the pistol with his teeth and throws it. Edith watches in shock. Henry glares at Officer Jenkins; Jenkins kicks Henry in the stomach hard. Henry groans)

OFFICER JERKINS

(screams) DON'T YOU THREATEN ME. DON'T YOU-

(Officer Jerkins kicks Henry again in the stomach; Henry groans and puts his head down)

OFFICER JERKINS

(kicks Henry in the stomach) DON'T. YOU. THREATEN. ME-

(Henry groans in agony as his stomach gets kicked. Henry groans and keeps his head down. Edith cries; and begins to be escorted out by Officer Jerkins' fellow policemen minutes later. Henry notices this; and becomes enraged; not wanting his grandmother to be taken away from him. Henry screams; engulfs in flames; his stomach, arms, and chest all engulf in flames. Officer Jerkins witnesses Henry's true power; and grabs his assault rifle; Henry tries to break free out of his handcuffs; but can't due to the strong metal. Edith is successfully escorted outside by Officer Jerkins' fellow policemen; Henry notices and is enraged whilst inflamed)

HENRY
(screams) NO. NO. NOOO-

(Henry screams as he continues to break free of his handcuffs; and struggles. Officer Jerkins shoots Henry's thigh; Henry screams in agony; and screams at Officer Jerkins in anger. Henry screams in pain and anger; and kicks Jerkins down. Henry grabs the gun with his barefoot; screaming at Jerkins. The policemen behind Henry attempt to grab the assault rifle; Henry stamps his barefoot on it. Officer Jerkins groans as he tries to stand back up, and overpower an inflamed Henry. Officer Jerkins struggles to stand back up; and instructs his police officers to shoot Henry with their individual shotguns)

OFFICER JERKINS
(screams at Officers) SHOTGUNS. USE THEM...
OVERPOWER HIM-

(Both policemen pull out their shotguns; and shoot at Henry's inflamed shoulders. Henry screams in agony; Henry glares at the policemen and kicks them both in the stomach; Henry screams in anger. One policemen shoots out tear gas at Henry's direction; both policemen jump out of the way of the tear gas. Henry groans with his wounds, and screams as his eyes become infected with the tear gas. Henry screams in pain and frustration; of not being able to see. Henry unleashes a blaze from his entire body; and burns down the entire hut; Henry screams in anger. As Edith is put into the SSP caddy; herself and her policemen notice Henry's powerful blaze and destruction of the hut)

INT. OUTSIDE ABANDONED HUT

SSP OFFICER - WITH EDITH
(to himself) OH MY GOD-

(Edith is seriously concerned about Henry.

Officer Jerkins managed to escape free from the large blaze. Officer Jerkins' fellow officers however; are severely injured after their attempted escape at the now demolished hut; with one unconscious; and with one his arms severely burned. Consumed with anger and intense hot flames; Henry groans and grunts in anger. Both policemen with Edith hop into the car; and ready their escape from Henry's fiery tirade. Henry notices the police caddy and runs for it; Edith notices Henry from inside the back passenger seat. Moments later; Henry climbs on the windscreen of the car; still handcuffed; and smashes it with his bare foot; blinding the police officer in the driver seat; making him unconscious. The police officer in the front passenger in PANIC, pulls out his shotgun and shoots at Henry's thigh and shoulder; Henry groans; Edith watches in shock. In retaliation; Henry bursts out flames from his chest to the SSP Officer 2. The SSP Officer 2 screams in agony from the burns Henry has inflicted on him; and whines in pain as he hops out of the car; but falls unconscious. Officer Jerkins suddenly opens the driver seat door; and tries to drive off. Henry notices; and crawls underneath the car; and burns the mechanics under the car hood by his chest; still handcuffed.. This prevents Officer Jerkins from driving the car; Officer Jerkins screams in panic. Edith continues watching in shock; Officer Jerkins looks backwards; and pulls out his pistol at Edith; Edith panics; suddenly Henry smashes the driver seat door with his head and burns Officer Jerkins' hand where he holds the pistol by his chest. Henry grits his teeth at Officer Jerkins; Officer Jerkins looks at Henry in hatred; and screams in agony as he gets burned by Henry. Henry hits Officer Jerkins in the forehead with his handcuffs; Officer Jerkins falls unconscious.

Edith in complete shock; watches Henry fall down in shock of what has just happened in the past 15 minutes. A tired Henry; stands up; makes his way to his grandmother from outside the car window. Henry cries; fearing what would have happened if his grandmother was shot or taken away. Edith is shocked, Henry is still inflamed)

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) Henry. Henry.

HENRY
(cries to Edith, inflamed) Grandma. Grandma.
Grandma... I... I-

EDITH
(cries; to Henry) It's all over. It's over-

HENRY
(cries to Edith, inflamed) Grandma. I...
I...

(Henry looks at his inflamed chest; then looks back up at Edith in panic from outside the car window. Edith begins counselling Henry)

HENRY
(cries, inflamed) Henry. It's okay. It's-

(A shocked and upset Edith opens the back passenger door where an inflamed, upset Henry is waiting. Henry looks at his grandmother in sadness and cries; Edith worries for her grandson)

EDITH
(concerned; to Edith) Henry. I'm so sorry.
I'm so sorry-

HENRY
(cries, inflamed; to Edith) It wasn't your
fault Grandma. It wasn't your fault-

EDITH
(concerned; to Edith) Let's get you not on
fire... Let me help you-

(Henry cries and nods his head at his grandmother. Henry breathes, Edith begins counselling Henry)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) All right. Now close
your eyes, for me-

(An inflamed Henry closes his
eyes)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) Focus on another good
time we had together. Just you and me.
Describe what it was like-

HENRY
(thinks, eyes closed, inflamed) It was. The
time when you and me were at the campfire. A
few nights ago. After you helped me control
my ability that night. We were both funny to
each other-

(Edith remembers the night and
event Henry is talking about; a
few nights ago. Edith smiles)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) Oh I remember that
night. You were cheeky to Mister. And you
were funny-

(Henry laughs at the memories of
that night. Edith watches the
flames, slowly dissipate off
Henry's stomach and chest; Henry
is still inflamed on his shoulders
and arms. Henry breathes and
continues laughing)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) That was. Not letting
each other eat that possum one night. Now
that was cheeky of both of us-

(Henry laughs as he remembers the
night once more. Henry smiles and
breathes)

HENRY
(laughs to Edith) That was so funny-

(Henry continues laughing. The
flames on Henry's arm dissipate)

EDITH
(smiles) Let's see if we'll do that with
that duck, eh?

HENRY
(laughs) Yes. We shall see-

(The flames on Henry's handcuffed hands begin to dissipate; Henry is no longer on fire. Edith smiles; yet another successful counselling practice)

EDITH
(counselling Henry) Now open up Mister. Open your eyes-

(Henry opens his eyes. He looks down at his torso, arms and hands; and realises he is no longer inflamed. Henry smiles and is elated in relief; Henry looks at his grandmother with great pleasure)

HENRY
(elated) Grandma. You Did It. You Did It. You DID IT!!

(Edith smiles as he sees how joyful Henry is)

EDITH
(to Henry) No we did it. Sit beside me. Let me take those handcuffs off-

HENRY
(elated) Okay-

(Henry enters the destroyed car; and sits beside his grandmother. Edith smiles; Henry moves his handcuffs towards his grandmother. Edith attempts to remove the handcuffs off Henry)

EDITH
(to Henry) Let's get those dreadful handcuffs off. Dreadful they are-

HENRY
(smiles to Edith) They are. They are-

(Edith successfully removes the handcuffs off Henry. Henry looks at his free hands and closes his fists; circulating the fire blood in his body. Henry looks at his grandmother; and hugs Edith. Edith is concerned about the fight between Henry and the SSP)

EDITH
(hugging Henry) It's okay. It's all over. It's all over-

HENRY
(hugging Edith) It's over.

EDITH
(hugging Henry) I'm sorry this happened to you Henry. I'm sorry-

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother; and listens to his grandmother's comments)

HENRY
(concerned) It wasn't your fault Grandma. It wasn't. I...

(Henry becomes upset of the fact; he was so determined to save his grandmother from being shot and/or taken away from him. Henry pauses)

EDITH
(concerned) Henry. Are you okay?

(Henry cries at the incident)

HENRY
(cries) I was so determined to save you Grandma. So determined. I... I didn't want you shot or taken away from me. I... I don't want to live... or exist without you-

(Edith cries at Henry's heartfelt comments)

EDITH
(hugs Henry) Hey. It's okay-

HENRY
(cries, hugging Edith) I. I'm sorry you had to see me go crazy in flames. I didn't want them to take you from me... I didn't want them to-

EDITH
(hugs Henry) It's okay. It just. It makes me cry as I see you fought and try so hard to avoid the SSP take me away from you-

(Henry hears the terms SSP, and is unsure of what it stands for. Henry questions his grandmother)

HENRY
(questions, hugs Edith) SSP. What... What is that?

EDITH
(hugs Henry) Secret Service Police-

(Henry doesn't like the sound of Secret Service Police; and is concerned)

HENRY

(panics; hugs Edith) Secret Service Police... Secret Service. Secret. Service.

EDITH

(worries; hugs Henry) Henry. Don't worry. Don't worry-

HENRY

(concerned; hugs Edith) Why didn't they just send the Taylor Police after me? Why... Why the Secret Service Police?

EDITH

(worries; hugs Henry) Don't worry Henry. Don't worry-

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother; and looks at his grandmother in panic)

HENRY

(panics) But why? What do the Secret Service Police do?

(Edith doesn't want to tell Henry the purpose of the SSP; as she worries he may panic)

EDITH

(worries; hugs Edith) Henry. Don't worry-

(Henry panics increasingly more; and begs his grandmother for the answer of the purpose of the SSP)

HENRY

(cries) GRANDMA. What do the Secret Service Police do? WHAT?

(Edith admits the purpose of the SSP; as Henry pleads for the answer)

EDITH

(concerned) Henry. Henry. The SSP... Secret Service Police... They handle cases and situations that the Taylor Police cannot handle. They handle like all the tough cases.

(As Henry hears the answer, he starts to worry for his grandmother's safety and himself.)

Henry bends down, and puts his elbows on his knees in panic; and bites his fingers)

EDITH
(concerned) They. They tend to have more powerful weapons to. A more powerful arsonary-

(Henry panics; and continues to bite his fingers more)

HENRY
(concerned) Oh God. Oh God. Oh No-

EDITH
(concerned) I didn't want to tell you because I didn't want you to panic-

(Henry sits up and looks at his grandmother; and cries)

HENRY
(cries) Grandma. I. I'm sorry. For everything. What... What's gonna happen now after I fought the Secret Service Police? Who are they going to bring in after?

EDITH
(concerned) I don't want to say Henry-

HENRY
(cries) Please say. I've already heard the bad news of the Secret Service Police-

EDITH
(concerned) I think.... they might bring in the Army next-

(Henry panics; as he struggles with the thought of the army against himself. Henry panics)

HENRY
(panics) Oh No. Oh No. Oh No-

EDITH
(concerned) Henry. Don't worry. All I can--

HENRY
(panics) I don't want them to take you away from me. I don't want anyone to take you away from me. I stopped the Secret Service... the thing at the Police Station was an accident. It was Dad's fault. It was his. HIS. HIS-

EDITH
(concerned, hugs Henry) Henry. I believe you. I believe you. The incident at that police station was all your Dad's plan.

HENRY

(panics, hugging Edith) I have... I'm gonna have to fight harder. If they're gonna send the army after me; I won't let them take you from me. I will die trying-

(Henry groans from his bullet wounds. Edith stops hugging Henry; and notices Henry's wounds)

EDITH

(concerned) Henry. Your wounds. I've got to call Fred again. I've got to call him-

HENRY

(cries) Grandma. I-

EDITH

(concerned) No we've got to get you to the hospital.

HENRY

(cries) But your wounds. From the dingo.

EDITH

(concerned) I will get Fred to look at my wounds to. It's. It's going to be okay. I promise.

(Henry groans in injury; and worries of the army going after him. Henry stands up; and helps Edith up. Edith dials Fred's number on her phone)

INT. TAYLOR GENERAL HOSPITAL - SURGICAL ROOM

(On his break at surgical work - Fred recognises Edith's phone number and walks outside the break room; to have privacy with his phone call. Fred answers the phone)

FRED

(on phone) Edith. What's up?

EDITH

(on phone) Henry needs to get to the hospital right away. But uh... Are you on your break or something?

FRED

(on phone) Yeah... Yeah... I am. I've got to go back in 15 minutes--

EDITH

(on phone) We uh. We uh... We need transport there. Is it possible if you could drive us? I'll pay you for the petrol.

FRED

(on phone) No. No worries about the money...
Where are you?

EDITH

(on phone) Taylor River again. Henry's been
severely injured.

FRED

(on phone) Again. I'm not surprised. Sure.
I'm on my way. But still... I still don't
like Henry very much. Even months after that
incident at Beth's Diner. But anyway... I'm
on my way.

(Fred ends the phone call. Edith
looks at Henry, concerned)

INT. OUTSIDE DEMOLISHED HUT

EDITH

(to Henry) He's coming Henry... Let me
just... Let's get our personal belongings.

(Henry, concerned about Edith, and
still in shock of the fight he had
with the SSP - makes his way
toward what is now the demolished
abandoned hut. Henry notices the
deeply, wounded, unconscious SSP
Officers on the ground; and
notices the blaze he put out
destroyed the sleeping bags. Henry
bends down; and all contents
within the shopping bags are
destroyed; and is saddened by
this. Henry stands up moments
later; and looks at the
unconscious SSP Officers in
annoyance. Henry makes his way
toward Edith. Edith has collected
her belongings - phone and purse.
Henry has his phone and purse;
nothing more. Edith notices a
saddened Henry)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) It's okay Henry. It's okay.

HENRY

(saddened) I've. I just. I got more
protection and fighting to do yet. I... I
just...

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Henry. It's-

(Edith walks toward Henry and holds his other hand. Henry holds his grandmother's hand tight; and cries in her arms)

HENRY

(cries) I... I... just want you and me to have a peaceful life. I don't want to fight anyone. I just... I don't want them to take you from me...

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Hey. It's okay. We're just. We're just going to have to stay hidden. In hiding. Or maybe we've got to move to another town.

HENRY

(cries) Maybe. I just. I don't want this fighting. I don't want to do it. It's tiring. But if... if they're going to take you away from me - I will fight back. I need to fight back. For my own sanity. And to protect you-

EDITH

(comforts Henry) I know. I know-

(Moments later - Fred pulls his sedan up directly next to Henry & Edith. Edith notices the sedan; Fred notices another injured, yet shirtless Henry with his grandmother; waiting by her side. Fred parks the car; hops out of the driving car and acknowledges Edith; making his way to her side)

FRED

(concerned) Hello Edith.

EDITH

(to Fred) Hello Fred-

HENRY

(to Fred) Hello Fred.

(Fred ignores Henry's greeting. Henry realises Fred still dislikes him; months later after the incident at Beth's Diner. Annoyed, Edith corrects Fred of his ignorance)

EDITH

(annoyed, to Fred) Hello Henry-

FRED

(waves to Henry) Hello Henry.

Made in Highland

(Henry waves to Fred. Fred stops looking at Henry; Henry is offended)

FRED

(to Edith & Henry) Quick. In the car. I've got to get back to work. 15 minutes.

INT. INSIDE FRED'S SEDAN

(Edith hops into the front passenger seat. Henry opens the door, and hops into the back passenger seat; behind the front passenger seat. Henry & Edith put their seatbelts on; Fred drives to the hospital. Minutes later; they arrive. Fred grabs a blue shirt from the car glove box; and hands it to Henry)

FRED

(to Henry) You need to have a shirt on at least in the reception area please.

(Embarrassed by Fred's comments - Henry puts the blue shirt on himself; and groans whilst doing so; due to his shoulder pain. Henry is still wearing the black shorts; and is still barefoot. Fred questions Henry's groaning)

FRED

(questions Edith) Henry's been shot again?

EDITH

(concerned) Yes.

(They arrive at the front of Taylor General Hospital; in the parking lot. Henry takes his seatbelt off; groans; hops out of the car; barefoot. Henry holds his hand on his thigh; groaning in agony. Fred recognises Henry is barefoot)

FRED

(annoyed) My God. He needs shoes to. Does he burn them off to?

EDITH

(annoyed) Fred. Enough with the insults-

(Henry is insulted and stands with his back against Edith's car door; groaning in agony. Edith looks at Henry from inside the car door; and worries. Fred takes his seatbelt off; and walks by the boot of the car. Fred takes out some old black workboots; and hands them to Henry. Henry groans as he puts Fred's old black workboots on; Fred identifies they are too big for Henry)

FRED

(chuckles) The workboots are too big for you. Damn...

(Henry groans in agony from his thigh wounds; Edith worries for Henry. Fred searches for more shoes in the boot of the car. Fred can not locate any more spare shoes for Henry to wear)

FRED

(to Henry) Well you're stuck with wearing them Henry. Sorry.

(Henry continues groaning in agony. Edith takes her seatbelt off and hops out of the car; Henry hears Edith and looks at her. Edith notices Henry is in deep pain and agony)

EDITH

(concerned) I'm sorry Henry. I'm sorry.

(Henry cries in agony as he looks at his grandmother. Henry cries; Edith hugs Henry)

HENRY

(cries; hugging Edith) It's not your fault Grandma. It's not your fault. It's not-

(Henry groans in pain as he hugs his grandmother)

EDITH

(concerned, hugging Henry) You're in so much pain. It makes me sad to see you in so much pain. It makes me sad-

(Fred fronts Edith and Henry)

FRED

(to Edith) All right. Henry's going to have to wait in reception. He's going to have to have surgery done.

EDITH
(to Fred) Righto. I understand-

(Henry groans in agony)

FRED
(to Edith) He might have to wait 15 minutes
or so. I've got other patients.

HENRY
(groans in pain) Grandma. Come. Come with
me. Come-

FRED
(interrupts Henry) Not in Operation Theatre
Henry. No. Not allowed.

(Henry worries. Edith reassures
Henry he will be fine)

EDITH
(reassures Henry) Henry. You're gonna be
fine. You're gonna be fine-

HENRY
(cries to Edith) Okay. Okay Grandma. Okay.
Okay-

EDITH
(comforts Henry) I will be in the reception
area waiting for you. Think of something
while you're in there to distract the fear.

HENRY
(cries to Edith) Okay. Okay. Okay. I will
think of you-

EDITH
(comforts Henry) Be brave. Be brave Henry-

(Henry nods his head)

EDITH
(to Henry) Let's go in reception now. Let's
go.

INT. TAYLOR GENERAL HOSPITAL - RECEPTION
AREA

(Henry and Edith follow Fred into
the reception area of Taylor
General Hospital. Fred fronts the
receptionist; Jane)

FRED
(to Receptionist Jane) Hi Jane. This next
patient behind me. This young man. Name:
Henry James Lovell. He's my patient.

(Jane types Henry's name to the patient database)

RECEPTIONIST JANE

(to Fred) Yes. Dr. Fred. That's done.

FRED

(to Receptionist Jane) Thanks Jane. Thanks-

RECEPTIONIST JANE

(to Fred) No worries Dr. Fred.

FRED

(to Edith) Okay. Henry's going to have to wait here. Until my current surgery is done. I'll be back.

EDITH

(to Fred) Okay. No worries. Henry and I will wait here-

(Fred returns to operation theatre after his break; to operate on another patient. Moments later, Henry sits beside his grandmother - terrified of the sight and sound of hospitals. The reception interior area of the hospital - is lime green; with white waiting seats surrounding the hospital; with hanging aloe vera plants above the ceiling; and a lime scent dispersed by the diffuser. Screaming of newly born babies is heard throughout the hospital. Edith notices Henry panicking in fear of the hospital; Edith comforts Henry)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Henry. Henry. It's okay. It's okay.

(Henry shakes his head; and hugs his grandmother)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) It's okay. It's okay.

HENRY

(fearful, hugging Edith) No. It's... It's not. I don't like this place. I don't like it at all. I don't-

EDITH

(comforts Henry) It's going to be okay. I promise-

(Minutes later - Fred comes out at the reception area. He calls for Henry Lovell)

FRED

(calling) Henry Lovell please.

(Henry looks worried at his grandmother. Henry stands up; and worries as he leaves her side)

EDITH

(reassures Henry) It's going to be okay. It's going to be okay. Just breathe-

(Henry cries whilst looking at his grandmother; and wipes his tears. Henry stands up; breathes and makes his way toward Fred; Fred is dressed in a green surgical gown; surgical gloves; face shield; surgical theatre boots and a sterile mask. Henry approaches Fred; and worries. Fred closes the door between the reception area, the operating theatre and surgical offices. Henry groans as he enters the room behind the reception area. Surgeons among the busy surgical rooms walk in a fast pace - working at a fast-steady pace to ensure successful surgeries. Henry panics; Fred instructs Henry to his office. Fred closes the door behind Henry and himself. Henry looks around Fred's office; and is concerned)

FRED

(grabs paperwork) Righto Henry. You're going to be going under surgery; so I can remove those bullet shrapnels out from your system... You will be knocked out.

(Henry nods his head in agreement; and is scared)

FRED

(to Henry) Your bullet wounds. Where are they again?

HENRY

(groans to Fred) My shoulders and my thigh.

(Henry holds his hand on his sore; shot thigh)

FRED

(to Henry) Well that means... Since I'm doing surgical work on your shoulders... that shirt needs to come off. Clothing will be too restrictive for this surgery.

(Henry takes off his shirt; and hands it to Fred. Fred notes Henry's comments on injury and bodily injuries down on his patient file)

FRED
(to Henry) Righto. Follow me. Operation Theatre; we go.

(Minutes later; Henry is in surgery; asleep from the general anaesthesia. Fred successfully surgically removes all bullet shrapnels from Henry's wounds. The procedure is done; Henry wakes up and notices Fred)

HENRY
(wakes up) I. I-

FRED
(to Henry) All done. You can go home now.

HENRY
(smiles) Yes. Yes... Thank you.

(Henry stands up. Fred hands Henry the shirt he was wearing before. Henry puts his shirt back on. Moments later, Henry makes his way toward Fred; Fred walks Henry to Edith. Edith smiles as she sees her grandson out of operation)

EDITH
(smiles at Henry) Hello Mister. How do you feel?

HENRY
(smiles) Happy to see you Grandma. I'm happy to see you-

EDITH
(to Fred) How was the procedure?

FRED
(to Edith) Easy. Easy as-

(Henry smiles at his grandmother; and hugs her)

HENRY
(cries with love, hugging Edith) Me love you Grandma.

EDITH
(hugging Henry) I love you to my hero-

(Henry smiles at being called a 'hero' by his grandmother. Henry continues hugging his grandmother; and groans from his recovery wounds. Fred notices)

FRED

(to Edith) Edith. Henry needs to recover well tonight. So no fidgeting or moving around much; just relaxing and recovering. Body on the sofa; and recovering.

EDITH

(to Fred) I understand.

FRED

(to Edith) You can come to my house. Let's go-

EDITH

(thankful) Oh thankyou Fred. Thankyou.

INT. FRED'S RESIDENCE - TELEVISION ROOM

(Hours later - Henry is recovering from his surgery; and is laying on Fred's sofa with his feet stretching out. Edith sits on an ottoman, directly in front of Henry. Fred is in the kitchen getting himself and Edith a cup of mocha. The television is on; playing cricket. Edith watches over Henry. Fred interrupts Edith from watching the cricket)

FRED

(shouting out) Want any sugar Edith?

EDITH

(shouts to Fred) No thanks Fred. No thanks-

(Henry groans as he reaches his hand to his grandmother from the sofa. Edith recognises Henry's hand nearing hers; and holds his hand)

HENRY

(groans) Grandma. Grandma.

EDITH

(concerned, to Henry) It's okay Henry. Rest up. Rest up.

HENRY

(groans) Grandma. Grandma.

Made in Highland

EDITH

(concerned, to Henry) It's okay. I know. You're in pain. I know. The pain will go away.... Just rest. Rest up.

HENRY

(groans) I will try. I will-

(Henry turns his body to the side; wishing to face Edith more but groans in the process.. Fred notices Henry fidgeting after his surgery; as he strictly advised him not to do so after surgery. Fred is annoyed)

FRED

(annoyed, to Henry) Henry. No fidgeting I said. Your body needs to heal.

(Annoyed but agrees, Henry tries not to fidget)

HENRY

(annoyed, to Fred) I just want to hold Grandma's hand. I just want to hold her hand-

FRED

(annoyed, to Henry) Like I said after surgery - you shouldn't be moving much. You've got to allow that body of yours to heal.

HENRY

(saddened, to Fred) I know. I know.

(Henry ignores Fred; and sits up; groaning with his recovering shoulder; holding his hand down on his recovering thigh in the process. Fred is annoyed of Henry's ignorance. Edith worries of Henry's ignorance towards Fred regarding his after-surgery; thus worrying of Henry doing more damage to his body)

FRED

(annoyed, to himself) And he still doesn't listen. Whatever...

(Edith notices Henry wishing to hold Edith's hand easier for comfort and strength)

EDITH

(concerned) Henry. Fred's right. You're pushing your body too much. Stop-

(Henry holds his grandmother's hand; and holds his other hand on his recovering thigh. Henry looks down at his hand holding his recovering thigh. Henry groans; Edith worries about Henry)

EDITH

(concerned, holding Henry's hand) Henry. Like Fred said - you need to rest. You need to rest. It is a necessity to your healing process.

HENRY

(groans, holding Edith's hand) I will tonight. I will sleep plenty tonight. I will. I will. I will-

EDITH

(concerned, holding Henry's hand) I'm just concerned. I'm just concerned Henry.

HENRY

(groans, holding Edith's hand) I know. I know Grandma. I love that you care. It makes. It makes me very happy... and much loved.

EDITH

(concerned, holding Henry's hand) I just want you to heal...

(Edith pauses. Fred returns to the boiled kettle; and pours himself and Edith both a cup of mocha. He returns to the loungeroom; and hands Edith her cup of mocha)

EDITH

(thankful) Thanks Fred.

(Fred nods his head, agreeing. Fred sits down on the recliner; watching the cricket on the television. Fred gets excited about the cricket on the telly)

FRED

(chuckles) I wonder who's gonna win tonight. Greens or Golds. Shall be exciting-

(Fred rubs his hands in excitement. Henry looks back up at his grandmother; and smiles in pain)

EDITH

(smiles; holding Henry's hand) You want a drink Henry? Water... Juice... Tea-

FRED

(to Edith) Don't forget Mocha-

EDITH

(to Fred) Henry doesn't drink coffee. Or do you Henry?

HENRY

(shakes head) No I uh. I don't drink coffee.
(to Edith) Grandma... Some juice. Orange Juice.

FRED

(smiles) Sure. Freshly squeezed orange juice is in the fridge.

EDITH

(to Fred) Thanks. Henry. I'll get it. Rest up-

(Edith stands up; and makes her way to the kitchen. Henry watches his grandmother make her way into the kitchen. Henry hears Edith getting a glass cup from the cupboard in the kitchen. Henry wishing to be near his grandmother - stands up; groans in pain; and makes his way to the kitchen. Fred notices this and is annoyed)

FRED

(annoyed, to himself) Can't be told that young man.

(Edith pours freshly squeezed orange juice from a bottle into the glass cup. Henry arrives at the kitchen; groaning in pain; and makes his way near his grandmother. Edith turns her head and notices a recovering Henry behind him)

EDITH

(concerned) Henry. You've got to rest up. I'm getting concerned.

HENRY

(groans) I said tonight I will. Tonight. Tonight-

(Henry groans.)

Edith hands Henry the cup of orange juice; Henry consumes it. Henry burps after having the orange juice; and smiles at Edith)

EDITH
(Smiles) Yummy-

(Henry burps again)

HENRY
(nods head) Yummy in my tummy-

(Edith chuckles. Henry chuckles and smiles at his grandmother. Meanwhile; Fred is yelling and cheering on the Greens Cricket team. Henry looks out from the kitchen to the living room at an over excited Fred)

EDITH
(whispers to Henry) He loves his cricket; don't he??

(Henry smiles at his grandmother; and nods her head)

HENRY
(whispers to Edith) He sure does Grandma.

(Henry groans as he hugs his grandmother. Edith taps Henry on the back for comfort whilst hugging him)

EDITH
(hugging Henry) It's all good Henry. All good-

HENRY
(hugging Edith) When I'm with you; it's all good. I'm only good when I'm with you.

(Edith smiles. Moments later; Henry stops hugging his grandmother and smiles at her)

EDITH
(smiles) Come on. Let's go watch crazy Fred with the cricket.

(Henry nods his head. Moments later; Henry is sitting on the sofa beside his grandmother. Henry holds his grandmother's hand for comfort; whilst Fred is yelling on the Greens Cricket team to win)

FRED
(yelling) GREENS. GREENS. GO. GO.

(Edith chuckles at Henry. Henry chuckles at his grandmother. The Green Cricket team score a point. Fred yells in excitement)

FRED
(screams) YES. YES. BLOODY YES-

(Fred looks overly excited at Edith. Henry breathes and smiles at Fred)

FRED
(excited, to Edith) See that Edith. They won. They won. They BLOODY WON-

EDITH
(Smiles at Fred) Yes I see.

(Henry smiles and breathes at his grandmother)

FRED
(smiles, to Edith) YOU JUST CAN'T BEAT THE GREENS. THEY'RE TOO BLOODY GOOD. TOO BLOODY GOOD-

(Henry smiles. Hours later; the three are still watching the cricket. Fred yawns and gets tired with his empty mug of mocha in his hand. Edith looks at Henry)

EDITH
(smiles, to Henry) Well look at him Henry. The man is tired-

(Henry chuckles at Edith. Henry rests his head on his grandmother's shoulder)

FRED
(yawns, to Edith) Yeah I am. Good game. Good game... I already know who's gonna win. Not gonna finish the rest of it. Just um... Well I might head to bed.

EDITH
 (smiles, to Fred) Righto. Righto. We ah
 might head off to-

FRED
 (concerned, to Edith) Have you got anywhere
 to sleep tonight or no?

EDITH
 (concerned, to Fred) No. Not really.

FRED
 (concerned, to Edith) Then sleep here. I've
 only got one spare bed in the room.

EDITH
 (concerned, to Edith) Are you sure Fred? Are
 you sure?

FRED
 (reassures Edith) I am sure. Don't want you
 sleeping on the streets now do I? Beth
 wouldn't be happy about me doing that.

EDITH
 (chuckles, to FRED) No she won't.

FRED
 (chuckles to Edith) Good. Well uh.

HENRY
 (interrupts) I can sleep outside-

(Edith disagrees with Henry;
 refusing to let Henry sleep like a
 dog)

EDITH
 (to Henry) No Henry. No.

HENRY
 (concerned, to Henry) But Grandma. But
 Grandma. I--

EDITH
 (reassures Henry) No Henry. No. You're a
 human being. Not a dog-

FRED
 (chuckles) Superhuman. More enhanced human-

(Henry doesn't like being called a
 "superhuman" or being treated as
 something more superior to other
 human beings; because of his
 abilities)

HENRY

(scared, to Edith) Grandma. I'm scared. I'm scared of myself. I... What if I?

EDITH

(to Henry) Henry. Like I said; if anything happens; if you wake up from a bad dream inflamed - let me know. Scream for me if you have to. Okay.

HENRY

(scared, to Edith) Okay. Okay.

EDITH

(reassures Henry) It's gonna be fine. I promise you Henry. I promise... Just... You let me know if you're in trouble. We can stop it together-

HENRY

(cries; nods head) Okay Grandma. Okay. You will be here to help me if anything happens-

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Please try not to have a bad dream. I don't want my house burned down-

(This insults Henry; Henry cries at Fred's comments. Edith is far from pleased)

EDITH

(annoyed; to Fred) Fred. We all have bad dreams.

FRED

(to Edith) I may scream from my scary dreams when I wake up. But Henry... he might be on fire when he wakes up-

EDITH

(reassures Fred) Fred. Everything will be okay. Henry will let me know if he needs me. We will stop this together-

(Henry smiles at his grandmother's kind words. Henry hugs his grandmother; and breathes)

EDITH

(hugging Henry; reassuring Henry) It's going to be fine Henry. It's going to be fine-

(Henry cries at his grandmother's kind words; Edith wonders why Henry is crying)

EDITH

(hugging Henry, questions Henry) Why are you crying?

HENRY

(hugging Edith; cries) You're just so kind. You're so kind to me. I love it-

(Edith comforts Henry by rubbing his back for support. Henry smiles)

FRED

(to Henry) Alright Henry. You might need blankets. I'll get some-

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother; and smiles at her. Fred returns to Henry & Edith moments later; with thick green and yellow blankets; with a warm white quilt. Edith notices the blankets and quilt; Fred hands them to Edith)

FRED

(to Edith) I think these will keep Henry warm; you think?

(Edith feels the thickness of the blankets and quilts, and nods her head at Fred)

EDITH

(to Henry) They sure will... thanks Fred.

(Henry groans as he lays down; Edith worries of Henry's pain. Edith stands up and puts the blankets over Henry's body)

EDITH

(concerned, to Henry) Hopefully most of the pain heals off tomorrow... Oh... Before you go to bed; your painkillers. I'll be back-

(Edith makes her way to the kitchen; Fred notices Henry sticking his head up to see Edith; groaning in the process)

FRED

(to Henry) LESS MOVING HENRY. MY GOD-

(Henry listens to Fred; and puts his head back down and waits for his grandmother)

EDITH
 (shouting) Don't use the Lord's name in vain
 Fred-

FRED
 (chuckles) Oh oh. I'm in trouble.

(Henry chuckles at his
 grandmother's words to Fred. Edith
 returns with a glass of water, and
 one tablet of painkillers)

EDITH
 (to Henry) Up you get. Slowly.

(Henry groans as he sits up; and
 holds his recovering shoulder;
 Edith worries)

EDITH
 (to Henry) Nice and easy. No pushing-

(Henry consumes the glass of water
 with the painkiller. Henry gulps
 the liquid down with the tablet;
 and groans as he lays back down.
 Edith sits on the ottoman beside
 the sofa where Henry is laying)

EDITH
 (holds Henry's hand) That should alleviate
 the pain a bit Henry-

HENRY
 (groans; to Edith) Thank. You. Grandma-

EDITH
 (holds Henry's hand) I love you Mister. So
 does God, and your mother looking up at us-

HENRY
 (groans; to Edith) I love you to Grandma. Me
 love you to-

(Henry holds his grandmother's
 hand tight. Moments later - Edith
 lets go of Henry's hand; and
 stands back up)

EDITH
 (to Henry) Righto. Goodnight Henry-

HENRY
 (to Edith) Goodnight Grandma.

(Moments later; Fred directs Edith to the spare room where she will be sleeping for the night. 10 minutes later; Edith is asleep; and Fred is asleep. Henry is still laying awake at night; in agony; trying to recover from the pain. Henry looks up at the ceiling and breathes. Henry looks down the hallway; and thinks of his grandmother. Henry breathes; and hears a loud bang. Henry panics and sits up; the blankets fall off him. Henry breathes; and tries not to panic; and looks at the television. Henry breathes; groans as he lifts the blankets up off the floor and puts them over his body. Henry moves his foot in directions to distract himself from fear. Moments later; Henry falls asleep. THAT NIGHT - Henry is sound asleep; and is recovering. Meanwhile outside - Vince has tracked Henry's location again by his phone; with which is on the coffee table beside the sofa in which he is laying. Surprisingly; Bobby is beside Henry - proving that Bobby was using Henry for Vince's personal gain all along; yet is attempting with Vince to make Henry lose control again. Bobby uses a telescope and notices a sleeping; injured Henry)

BOBBY

(looking through telescope) He's sound asleep sir. Your son is asleep-

VINCE

(smirks) Yeah. So. I'm gonna wake him up. Wake his ability up. (pulls out sniper) With this sniper... with gunshot wounds... This shall be interesting-

BOBBY

(looking through telescope) Let's do it. Power this man up-

(Vince aims his sniper at Henry's shoulder yet again)

VINCE

(to himself; aiming gun) Fire my son. Fire on-

(Vince shoots Henry's shoulder yet again. Henry screams in agony; Henry looks at his injured shoulder; and screams. Edith wakes up; thinking Henry has had a bad dream yet again; and has lost control. She gets up; and makes her way to Henry. Henry scans the environment he is in with his eyes; not finding any source of impact on his shoulder. Henry cries in agony; Edith makes her way to Henry; and notices he's been shot yet again)

EDITH

(frantic, to Henry) Henry. Your shoulder. You've... You've been shot again-

(Henry nods his head; and cries in agony)

EDITH

(frantic, to Henry) Oh God. No. No-

(Henry makes her way towards Edith; a gunshot hits directly next to Edith. Edith screams; Henry screams in fear; witnessing this; and grabs his grandmother closely; hugging her in protection)

EDITH

(frantic, hugged by Henry) Oh My. Oh My-

HENRY

(scared; hugging Edith) Stay in my arms Grandma. Stay in my arms-

(Another gunshot wound hits next to Edith again. Henry witnesses this; and screams; fearing his grandmother may get shot. Henry cries in fear; and scans the environment. Vince looks through the telescope from outside; seeing his son in fear of losing his beloved grandmother. Henry lets go of Edith)

HENRY

(scared; to Edith) Grandma. Get down. Lay down on the ground-

(A frantic Edith lies down on the ground; on her back. Henry cries in fear as he bends down; and covers Edith with his body)

EDITH
(concerned) Henry. Who?

HENRY
(panics) Someone's trying to shoot you. And
kill you. I'LL KILL THEM FOR THIS-

EDITH
(concerned) I know-

(Another gunshot wound is heard;
shooting Henry's back. Henry
screams in agony; Edith
frantically cries)

EDITH
(frantic) HENRY. HENRY.

(Henry cries in agony. Edith
screams for Fred)

EDITH
(screams) FRED. FRED.

(Fred wakes up; and hears Edith
scream her name. With concern -
Fred makes his way quickly to the
loungeroom. Fred notices Henry's
body covering his grandmother's.
Henry looks scared at Fred)

HENRY
(cries, covering Edith) Someone's trying to
shoot Grandma. Someone's trying to shoot
her... Someone-

FRED
(concerned) Oh My God... Here. Let me. Let
me... protect her.

HENRY
(cries, covering Edith) Keep her safe
please. Keep Grandma safe. Keep her safe-

(Another gunshot wound is heard;
and hits Henry's foot; Henry
screams in agony. Edith is
screaming in fear; of her grandson
dying from his wounds)

EDITH
(frantic, covered by Henry) HENRY. HENRY-

HENRY
(cries in agony, covering Henry) It's okay-

EDITH
(frantic, covered by Henry) No it's not...
It's not Henry... Use your ability. You're
gonna have to use it-

HENRY

(cries in agony, covering Henry) I will. I will. I will-

(Henry groans as he helps his grandmother up; covering her whilst he walks her to Fred. Fred is shocked)

FRED

(frightened) Oh my God.

HENRY

(scared) Keep Grandma safe. Keep her safe for me-

(Henry gets shot in the leg; Henry screams. Edith notices and frantically cries; Fred holds Edith close)

EDITH

(frantically cries) HENRY. USE YOUR ABILITY. USE IT-

(Henry agrees and ignites himself in flames)

HENRY

(begs Fred) Please protect Grandma. Protect her-

INT. FRED'S RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(Edith frantically cries as she watches her inflamed grandson go outside to hunt the gunner. Vince notices Henry; and smiles. Vince aims at Henry's thigh; and shoots. Henry screams in pain; Henry's flames begin to get intensely hotter. Henry notices a light shadow in between Fred's garden. Henry approaches it; Vince panics; and attempts to shoot Henry. Henry notices the gun and screams as he grabs it forcefully off the person in the shadow; and notices it is his father)

VINCE

(smiles) HELLO SON-

(Henry screams at his father. Vince smiles; Henry spurts out fire from his hand to Vince's arm.

Vince groans; Henry stamps his feet on Vince's neck. Vince pulls out a shotgun from his belt and shoots Henry's foot again; Vince groans. Henry loses his mind; bends down; and burns his father's neck. Vince screams in pain and excitement; Vince shoots Henry's chest. This cripples Henry as he falls down; severely injured as his heart struggles. Henry holds his hand on his chest; and groans. Vince groans from his neck burns; and stands up)

VINCE
(furious) BAD SON. BAD. BAD. BOY-

(Henry gets shot in the thigh again; Henry screams in pain and struggles. with his heart giving in)

VINCE
(furious) YOU'RE DOWN. GOOD. NOW I WILL KILL YOUR GRANNY AND REHABILITATE YOU, AND MAKE YOU ABIDE BY ME. ALRIGHT-

(Henry hears Vince's decision to kill his grandmother. Henry goes berserk; and attacks Vince - pushing him to the ground breaking his hand. Vince groans; Henry punches his father in the face repeatedly; Henry bursts out a bolt of flames from his chest to Vince's chest. Henry screams in anger whilst doing so; Vince screams as he gets severe third-degree burns)

HENRY
(furious) LEAVE MY GRANDMA ALONEEEEEEE!!

(Henry's chest is heavily inflamed; Vince begs Henry to stop; Henry has lost his mind; and is now mentally ill)

VINCE
(screams in pain) STOP HENRY. STOP-

(Henry bites his father's cheeks, and screams in anger; Vince groans. Henry breaks both of Vince's legs; making him crippled for life. Vince screams the loudest ever in severe agony.

Henry screams as he punches his father in the face hard; knocking him out. Henry grits his teeth hard; and screams at Fred. Meanwhile; Bobby points a gun at Edith)

BOBBY

(shouts at Fred) Let her go. Or you're dead-

(Edith is shocked to see Bobby working with Vince again; proving to be nothing but trouble at the start)

EDITH

(upset) Bobby. I. I thought. I thought you don't like Vince.

BOBBY

(laughs) That was all crap I told you and the Emperor.

EDITH

(cries) Please Bobby. Stop this. Be a better person. Be a better man. Come on-

BOBBY

(laughs) My mission here is simple. Kill you. Then Henry can be one of-

(Henry smashes the window; and grabs Bobby from outside. Edith can hear Bobby scream as Henry viciously attacks Bobby. Bobby screams in complete agony; as his legs get broken by Henry; Fred & Edith look at each other in worry. Henry throws Bobby to the brick wall; and is completely mentally insane. The screaming ends)

FRED

(shocked) Oh my God. Oh my-

EDITH

(cries) Oh my-

(A mentally insane Henry starts hitting his head on the concrete; overcome with fury and anger. Henry screams in viciousness. Fred looks at Henry from the kitchen window; as Henry viciously hits his head on the ground)

FRED

(concerned) Oh My God... Henry's. Henry's a mess-

EDITH
(cries) I can tell. He's not happy-

FRED
(concerned) I think he's dangerous to be around at the moment-

EDITH
(cries) He's just worked up. He was so scared of me getting shot and dying. It's fear and anger at once... I'm gonna talk to him.

FRED
(concerned) I'd be careful. But go ahead--

(Edith makes her way outside. Henry is seriously mentally ill; gritting his teeth; and looking vicious as ever. Henry bites hard; with his hands inflamed. Henry grunts; Edith keeps her distance from Henry)

EDITH
(concerned) Henry. Hey. I-

(Henry waves his hand backwards; not wanting her to be around him at the moment; as he is very worked up and angry by the fight)

HENRY
(cries) Go away-

EDITH
(respects Henry) Okay. Okay. I will. I'll just be inside-

(Edith walks backwards slowly)

EDITH
(respects Henry) I'm going. I'm going. I'm just-

(Henry bangs his fist on the ground; and viciously looks at Edith)

HENRY
(viciously) NOW. NOW. NOWWW!

(Edith gets scared by Henry's viciousness and vicious look at her. An upset Edith closes the back door; Fred stands in front of Edith)

FRED
(concerned) I told you-

EDITH
(upset) I've... He's never looked at me the way he just did... Poor... Poor Henry-

FRED
(concerned) Well Edith. When he's like this; he's dangerous. You trust him too much... You've got to remember. He's got the potential and power to kill you if he wants to. More easily than a normal man could-

EDITH
(cries) I know... I know... I know...

FRED
(concerned) Dangerous man; he is now. All that power - makes you a very dangerous person if you get aggravated and angry-

EDITH
(cries) I... I will. I will just. Let him... be-

(Henry opens the back door; having calm down; but is still very tense. The back door opens - Edith watches Henry go to the kitchen and wash his hands under the cold water. Edith notices the gunshot wounds on Henry's bare chest, leg, foot, shoulders, and thigh. Henry groans and falls down; as he holds his heart in agony)

FRED
(concerned) Henry. Are you alright?

(Henry shakes his head; in complete agony)

HENRY
(cries) Help me. My heart. My heart... My heart hurts...

(Henry starts going into cardiac arrest. Edith cries; Henry falls into unconsciousness)

EDITH
(frantic) HENRY. HENRY. (to Fred) FRED. HELP HIM. PLEASE-

(Fred makes his way to an unconscious Henry.)

Fred puts his hand on Fred's bare chest; analysing Henry's heartbeat; identifying Henry is in cardiac arrest)

FRED
(concerned) Edith... Henry's having a heart attack-

EDITH
(frantically cries) WHAT. NO. NO-

FRED
(concerned) He's got to get to hospital NOW... Call an ambulance-

(Moments later - an emergency ambulance has arrived and takes an unconscious Henry; Fred; and Edith to hospital. Moments later; they arrive in hospital. 5 minutes later; Henry is under operation theatre; Edith cries as she waits by reception. Edith is distraught by all what's happened. MEANWHILE in the operation theatre - Henry is knocked out; Fred performs CPR on Henry's heart. Henry's heart is not recovering and his heart rate is dropping; nearing death. The Holter Monitor sounds off)

FRED
(performing CPR on Henry) Come on Henry. Come on fireman--

(Fred continues to perform CPR on Henry. Henry's heartbeat goes dramatically down; The Holter Monitor sounds off even more. Fred believes Henry is not going to make it)

FRED
(performing CPR on Henry) Come on Henry. Fight on-

(Henry's chest engulfs in flames; Henry's heartbeat rate returns to normal - Fred realises he has saved Henry's life; and that fire acts as blood in Henry's system. Fred pours a bucket of water over Henry's inflamed chest; the flames dissipate.

Whilst knocked out - Fred performs surgery on Henry; removing the gun shrapnels from Henry's chest, leg, foot, shoulder, and thigh. Fred stitches Henry back up; and allows Henry to recover. Fred breathes; and smiles at himself of another successful surgical procedure done by him. Henry remains unconscious for two hours, and sleeps to recover. Fred sanitisers and washes his hands; and makes his way to the reception area. Edith stands up; with great concern)

EDITH

(concerned) Fred. Is he alright? Is Henry?

FRED

(to Edith) He's all good. He made it. I was thinking he wasn't going to because his heart rate dropped and dropped and dropped; nearing death. But he made it. He's just sleeping now. I'll wake him up in two hours.

EDITH

(concerned) Thank you Fred. Thank you-

FRED

(to Edith) His body. His body is very different than ours. So obviously; you, me, most people bleed blood; right.

EDITH

(answers Fred) Yes-

FRED

(to Edith) His body bleeds fire. I know... it sounds weird. But after his body engulfed in flames; his heart rate went back up to normal. Obviously with most people, you, me - our heart pumps blood throughout our entire body. But with Henry... that fire in him is his blood.

EDITH

(understands Fred) Oh. Right-

FRED

(confesses to Edith) You know... Henry's been telling me for months now - to find some way to get rid of his ability. I... I don't think I can. Because I think... I think it'll kill him if I do-

(Edith is shocked by what Henry has been planning Fred to do to him; the official removal of Henry's fire abilities for good)

EDITH
(unhappy; to Fred) WHAT?

FRED
(worried; to Edith) Yeah well Henry's not going to be happy-

EDITH
(unhappy; to Fred) Has Henry been trying to get you to get rid of his abilities? HAS HE?

FRED
(worried; to Edith) Yeah... He... He told me not to tell you... But I... I just can't keep that secret anymore from you-

(Edith is shocked of Henry's determination to work with Fred; into removing his abilities for good. Edith is lost for words)

EDITH
(disheartened; to Fred) I can't believe Henry has never told me he's doing this. I can't believe he's been keeping this secret from me...

FRED
(worried; to Edith) That's why I had to tell you-

EDITH
(determined; to Fred) Fred. Stop looking into it... it stops now. I'm going to talk to him about this...

FRED
(worried; to Edith) I'm sorry Edith. And yes... it all stops now.

(Edith is lost for words)

EDITH
(worried; to Fred) It'll break his heart when you tell him that you can't get of his abilities. But still... like I've told him millions of times - he just needs to learn to live with it. That's it.

FRED
(to Edith) Yep. That's right.

EDITH
(chuckles) Mind over matter right-

FRED
(chuckles) Yep. You're the mind doctor...

(Edith picks up shopping bags in her hands. Whilst Henry was in surgery - Edith went clothes shopping for herself and Henry. Fred notices the shopping bags)

FRED

(chuckles to Edith) You went shopping did ya?

EDITH

(to Fred) It's just clothes for Henry, and me really.

FRED

(to Edith) You know. Until you and Henry get set up again for another house - you can stay at my house.

EDITH

(to Fred) Oh thank you. Thank you Fred-

FRED

(to Edith) No worries. I'm a. I'm gonna head back to work. I'll come back out with Henry. Shouldn't be much longer-

EDITH

(to Fred) Thank you Fred. Thank you... Oh. Here are some change clothes for Henry.

(Fred takes the change clothes for Henry)

FRED

(to Edith) Alright... Alright. Shouldn't be much longer-

(Two hours pass - Fred walks back into operation theatre; Henry wakes up from anaesthesia awareness, and coughs. Fred looks at Henry; Henry notices Fred - and remembers everything)

HENRY

(coughs) Grandma. Grandma.

(Henry coughs)

FRED

(to Henry) It's all good Henry. All good-

HENRY

(to Fred) Where's Grandma? Where?

FRED

(to Henry) Out in reception, waiting for you... It's all good-

(Henry puts his hands on his barechest)

HENRY

(to Fred) I... I... I was. My heart hurt before. Me. What uh... What... What happened?

FRED

(to Henry) You had a heart attack Henry. But you're all good now. All good-

HENRY

(to Fred) It really hurt. The heart attack. The bullets. The bullets-

(Henry scans his barechest with his eyes for bullet wounds, but finds all stitches within his body)

HENRY

(to Fred) You got rid of them?

FRED

(to Henry) Yes I did. Your body's all stitched up. You got shot quite a bit-

HENRY

(to Fred) I know. That. THAT-

(Henry gets worked up; thinking of his crooked father. Fred puts his hand on Henry's shoulder)

FRED

(to Henry) Eh. Don't get worked up. It's not good for your heart. Your heart did a big workout.

HENRY

(to Fred) I uh. I know uh. I uh-

FRED

(questions Henry) What?

HENRY

(to Fred) I um. I know you probably still don't like me. Because of that. Because of that restaurant incident. And I uh... I completely understand-

FRED
 (questions Henry) What are you trying to say?

HENRY
 (to Fred) Thank. Thank you. Thank you for saving my life. Thank you-

FRED
 (honoured, to Henry) No worries. Now it's time to get changed. Your grandmother bought these clothes for you-

(Fred hands Henry a white shirt and green shorts. Henry groans as he gets up, holding his clothes)

FRED
 (worried) Careful-

(Henry stands up and groans from recovery; holding his clothes. Henry exits the operating theatre; walks into the change rooms and changes into his white shirt and green shorts. Moments later - Fred walks out with Henry to the reception area; Edith notices Henry; Henry hugs his grandmother tightly)

HENRY
 (loving, hugging Edith) Grandma. Grandma-

EDITH
 (relieved, hugging Henry) You're okay. You're okay-

(Henry cries with love to his grandmother; and continues hugging her)

HENRY
 (loving, hugging Edith) Grandma. Grandma-

EDITH
 (relieved) Let's get you home to rest-

(Henry nods his head. Fred clocks off; and drives himself, Henry and Edith home.

 INT. FRED'S SEDAN - FRED DRIVING

(Whilst driving; Henry looks out the car window; at houses as they drive by. Henry suddenly remembers how vicious he was to his grandmother before; and wants to apologise so quickly)

EDITH

(to Fred) I swear. Some houses have the nicest front gardens Fred. I swear-

FRED

(driving, to Edith) Yeah they do. They sure do-

HENRY

(interrupts) Grandma. Grandma. About before-

EDITH

(to Henry) What about before?

HENRY

(cries, to Edith) After the... After the fight before. At home. You uh... You came outside to try to help me... and I-

EDITH

(to Henry) Ah. Don't worry about it. All good.

HENRY

(cries, to Edith) I'm sorry... for the way I treated you. I got very angry. I didn't mean it. I didn't-

FRED

(driving, to Henry) You looked very. Don't mean to be rude. But mentally you weren't there after all that.

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) I know. You were right. You were right. I am so sorry Grandma.

(Henry cries in sadness; in displeasure of what he had done to his grandmother)

EDITH

(to Fred & Henry) Come on you both. Enough of it. Enough.

HENRY

(saddened to Edith) Grandma. Me sorry. Me sorry-

EDITH

(concerned) It's okay Henry. I forgive you. All I want you to do is now is rest-

HENRY

(concerned to Edith) Okay. But I... I want to talk about it soon... or later... soon.

EDITH

(to Henry) We will talk about what happened later. I just want you to rest. Just rest-

INT. FRED'S RESIDENCE - TELEVISION ROOM

(Minutes later - Edith, Fred and Henry arrive at Fred's residence. 30 minutes later - Henry is laying down on his back on the sofa; still wearing his white shirt & green shorts; allowing for recovery once again. Edith sits on an ottoman beside the sofa where Henry is laying down. Fred is watching the television; flicking through each channel. A saddened Henry begins talking to his grandmother)

HENRY

(saddened, to Edith) Grandma. Grandma.

(Fred realises Henry wants privacy in between him and his grandmother. Fred acknowledges this; switches the TV off)

FRED

(to Edith) Righto. I'm off to bed.... I can see Henry wants some time with you Edith.

EDITH

(thanks Fred) Oh thanks Fred. Thanks... and thanks for you saving Henry's life and stitching his wounds. It means the world to me-

FRED

(to Edith) No worries. (to Henry) Now Henry. Rest up. Relieve those tension in your body by getting plenty of sleep tonight. Righto?

HENRY

(nods head) Agreed-

FRED

(to Edith & Henry) Good night to both of you.

EDITH & HENRY

(to Fred) Goodnight-

(Fred heads to bed; and sleeps.
Edith looks at Henry; who he
desperately wants to talk to)

EDITH

(holds Henry's hand) It's okay Henry. It's okay.

HENRY

(cries, holds Edith's hand) At least you're safe. That's all that matters to me.... I don't care about my pain; I care about you-

EDITH

(holds Henry's hand) I know you do. I know you care about me. Protect me. And all those things-

HENRY

(cries, holds Edith's hand) But I hate the way I looked at you before... You were just asking me if I was okay? And I got mad at you. Me sorry... I'm sorry Grandma-

EDITH

(holds Henry's hand). No I understand Henry. Your father was trying to kill me; and you just wanted to protect me. He hurt you bad; you fought him. It's all anger and fear at once; I understand that anger.

HENRY

(cries, holding Edith's hand) Still.. I uh... I don't like the way I looked at you. I don't like it-

EDITH

(holding Henry's hand) Nah don't worry about it Henry. It's all good, and it's all over.

HENRY

(cries, holding Edith's hand) Yes.

EDITH

(holding Henry's hand) Just rest that body up. I need that strength of yours.

(Henry chuckles)

HENRY

(smiles, holding Edith's hand) Yes I need my strength to protect you from any bad people that will hurt you-

EDITH

(holding Henry's hand) Just rest Henry...
rest those wounds up.

(Henry breathes and continues
looking at his grandmother with
deep love)

EDITH

(holding Henry's hand) It's okay. Just...
Just relax-

(Moments later; Henry falls
asleep. Edith puts the green and
gold blankets over Henry; Edith
makes her way to bed and sleeps.
IT IS THE NEXT MORNING - Henry is
sound asleep; resting. Edith wakes
up and makes her way to the
kitchen; getting herself a glass
of water and reading the daily
newspaper; seated on a chair
against the dining room table.
Henry continues sleeping heavily.
Fred wakes up and notices Henry
sleeping heavily; allowing his
body for full recovery. Fred
notices Edith seated against the
dining room table; with her glass
of water and newspaper in her
hand. Fred begins whispering to
Edith)

FRED

(whispers to Edith) Henry's sleeping
heavily.

EDITH

(whispers to Fred) That's good. Allow his
body to heal-

(An asleep Henry tosses to the
side)

FRED

(whispers to Edith) Yes it is good. Allow
his body to rest-

EDITH

(finishes glass of water, whispers to Fred)
Well what a nice glass of water. Beau-ti-
ful-

FRED

(whispers to Edith) Yeah. Nothing beats a
glass of water.

(Henry wakes up; his eyes open.

Henry yawns as he sits up on bed; stretching his arms. Edith can hear Henry)

EDITH
(to Henry) Good morning Mister-

(Henry can hear his grandmother's voice; and smiles)

HENRY
(smiles, to Edith) Good morning my Grandma-

(Edith smiles. Henry stands up; half-way recovered. Henry makes his way toward the dining room table; and sits on a chair beside Edith at the dining room table)

FRED
(to Henry) Good morning Henry-

HENRY
(to Fred) Good morning-

(Henry looks at his grandmother; and smiles. Edith finishes reading the daily newspaper)

EDITH
(closes newspaper) Well that is depressing.

FRED
(to Edith) Yes. The news is depressing-

EDITH
(to Henry) How are your wounds Henry? You feel a bit better-

HENRY
(nods head, to Edith) A bit... Actually... maybe half-way-

EDITH
(shocked, to Henry) Your body heals fast does it?

(Henry chuckles)

FRED
(to Henry) Henry I uh... I've got to tell you something-

(Henry worries)

HENRY
(concerned, to Fred) Okay... uh?

FRED
(to Henry) You know how... How you've said to me once before... you want me to find some way to get rid of your abilities?

EDITH

(to Henry) I'm not in favour of that either
Henry. Fred told me about it-

(Henry is annoyed at Fred at not
keeping their secret from Edith)

HENRY

(annoyed; to Fred) WHAT?

FRED

(worried; to Henry) Henry. Hear me out... I
can't keep that secret away from your
grandmother-

HENRY

(annoyed; to Fred) I TOLD YOU IT IS BETWEEN
YOU AND ME---

(Henry smacks the table with his
fists)

HENRY

(angrily; to Fred) YOU GOT IT. YOU AND ME.
YOU AND DAMN ME-

(Henry smacks the table harder
with his fists. Edith is
concerned)

EDITH

(concerned, to Henry) Henry. Henry. Stop.
Stop please-

FRED

(annoyed; to Henry) Your grandma will find
out eventually Henry. You can't hide that--

(Henry gets up and paces the
kitchen; directly in front of the
dining room table; annoyed)

HENRY

(screams at Fred) SHE WOULDN'T HAVE FOUND
OUT IF YOU DIDN'T TELL HER. IF YOU DIDN'T...
THIS WAS SUPPOSED TO BE OUR SECRET-

(Edith is disheartened; of Henry
still wanting to keep this secret
from her.)

FRED

(annoyed; to Henry) Henry. Don't yell at me-

HENRY

(screams at Fred) YOU CAN'T KEEP SECRETS.
SECRETS. SECRETS. SECRETS-

(Henry engulfs himself in flames; tearing the white shirt off himself - making him shirtless once again. An upset Henry looks down at his bare chest; and is embarrassed. Henry folds his arms; and walks to the sink; with the remains of the shredded white shirt on the floor. An upset Henry refuses to talk; and looks out the kitchen window)

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) Henry. Henry-

(Edith stands up. Henry is embarrassed; and shakes his head)

FRED
(worried; to Henry) Henry. Your grandmother will find out eventually. What if she... what if she asked you to light the fire one day; and all of the sudden you couldn't because I got rid of your abilities-

HENRY
(annoyed; to Fred) GOOD. I'D BE SO MUCH HAPPIER-

(Fred and Edith are both shocked by Henry's outburst)

FRED
(concerned; to Henry) Henry. I-

EDITH
(interrupts Fred; to Henry) Henry. I don't like it. I don't agree to it...

(Henry becomes annoyed with his grandmother)

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) Henry. You're... It's like you're taking a living organ away from your body. It could be dangerous. It could kill you-

HENRY
(screams at Edith) I DON'T CARE. I WILL TAKE THE RISK. I WILL TAKE THE BLOODY RISK. SO I CAN BE NORMAL. SO I CAN BE A NORMAL PERSON; AND NOT EVER LIVE LIKE THIS AGAIN-

(Henry's hands engulf in flames.
Edith worries; Henry realises his
hands are in flames; and
apologises to Edith)

HENRY

(panics) Grandma. Grandma. I'm sorry. I'm
sorry... I'm... I'm sorry. I sorry. I-

(Edith watches Henry breathe as he
looks at his inflamed hands.
Moments later; the flames
dissipate off his hands. Henry
cries in sadness; and looks
outside the kitchen window)

HENRY

(cries to Fred) So. Is that all you were
going to say? Confess that you told Grandma
everything-

FRED

(confesses to Henry) No. That.. That it's
impossible-

(Henry cries as he looks at Fred;
deeply hurt by the answer)

HENRY

(cries; questions Fred) Impossible?

FRED

(confesses to Henry) It can't be done. It's
too dangerous... and it'll kill you-

(Henry looks at Fred; then his
grandmother; and cries from the
answer. Edith worries for her
grandson)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Henry-

HENRY

(cries to Fred) Haven't you done tests? Any
tests?

FRED

(confesses to Henry) Well it's a theory....
I think that ability of yours is like blood
to the heart-

(Henry is confused as to what Fred
is saying)

HENRY

(cries) WHAT?

FRED

(confesses to Henry) Do you remember that time... that time after you burned the house - I don't want to bring too much bad memories to your mind...

(Henry thinks back to the past; the same event; and grows depressed from it)

HENRY

(cries) Yes.

FRED

(confesses to Henry) And you suddenly collapsed from shock with that needle struck into your system-

(Henry nods his head and cries at Fred)

FRED

(confesses to Henry) I tried to uncover what happened. What was in the needle; the only way I could do that was through a blood test. So I tried when you were unconscious... and... there was no blood-

(Henry listens to Fred; and grows depressed by the minute as he thinks to himself of how indifferent and freakish he is to other humans)

FRED

(confesses to Henry) No blood... I tried again... no blood... The only thing that came out was a tiny red flame from your veins; like a drop of blood.

(An upset Henry struggles to hear Fred's confessions; and cries to himself)

FRED

(confesses to Henry) Anyway. I analysed that tiny red flame from your system on my bunsen burner. And it did show you were immunocompromised at that time-

FRED

(confesses to Henry) And my theory is... is that I believe your ability... acts as some kind of blood substance. And I honestly believe... that the removal of your abilities will potentially kill you-

HENRY

(cries; to Fred) So. You're not gonna try any more tests. Different tests-

FRED

(worried; to Henry) No Henry. No. I'm not going to risk doing damage to your body; or possibly killing you-

(Henry glares at Fred; and shakes his head in displeasure. Henry storms off; and slams the outside door. Edith looks saddened at Edith)

FRED

(concerned; to Edith) You had to know Edith; You had to.

EDITH

(concerned; to Fred) I know. I know. I've... I've got to talk to him...

(Fred nods his head at Edith. Edith stands up and makes her way outside)

INT. FRED'S RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(Henry sits outside on Fred's balcony; with his head on his knees - disheartened by Fred's confession and refusal in the removal of Henry's abilities. Henry cries to himself)

EDITH

(concerned; to Fred) I've got to go talk to him Fred.

FRED

(concerned; to Edith) Okay. Okay-

(Edith opens and closes the outside door. She is now outside; and notices an upset Henry with his head on his knees)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Henry. Can I uh? Can I?

(Although disheartened and upset - Henry nods and puts his hand out; allowing her to sit beside him. Moments later, Edith sits beside Henry)

EDITH
 (concerned; to Henry) I'm sorry Henry. I'm
 sorry.

(Henry doesn't say a thing - still
 completely disheartened)

EDITH
 (saddened; to Henry) It makes me really sad
 to see you like this Henry. Really sad-

(Henry cries)

EDITH
 (saddened; to Henry) And look I
 understand... I-

(Henry interrupts)

HENRY
 (cries) I just want to be normal...
 Normal... Just normal... Me normal...
 Please... Normal-

(Edith is saddened by Henry's
 displeasure with his life)

EDITH
 (saddened; to Henry) Henry. You have... You
 just have to accept the way you are. You
 can't change it-

HENRY
 (cries) Maybe with medication I can. To stop
 it. To just stop it-

EDITH
 (saddened; to Henry) Henry. There are side
 effects to medication; medication can
 probably make you lose more control-

HENRY
 (cries) So I can't win. I can't win... I
 can't win. I can't win. I can't. I can't--

EDITH
 (saddened; to Henry) Henry. You can. With
 mental control.

HENRY
 (cries) I guess. But I hate it. I don't like
 knowing I have it. I hate that it's there-

EDITH
 (saddened; to Henry) Henry. You can live a
 good life; don't let it stop you. You can.
 Another way you can stop it is... find
 things you enjoy... it'll distract you
 thinking about it.

HENRY

(cries) But it'll still be there. It'll still be there.

EDITH

(saddened; to Henry) Henry. You can't. I'm sorry... but you just can't... you just can't get rid of it. It's a part of you-

HENRY

(cries) I don't want it to be a part of me. I wish it wasn't. It's not a part of me-

EDITH

(saddened; to Henry) Henry. What about those people out there who are born sometimes with no arms or no legs. Sometimes both... They still get around. They don't let it get to them. They don't let it stop them from living their best life-

HENRY

(cries) True. True... But still. I'm dangerous. I'm fire. Full of fire inside. Me dangerous. At least with them - their limbness doesn't hurt anybody. My fire does. And I hate it. I will always hate it. Always. Always--

EDITH

(saddened; to Henry) Henry. Look... at the end of the day - they still don't let nothing stop them - they focus on their dreams and achieve them. If they just sit there and think all the time - 'I have no limbs and I'll never be good at anything and I can never do anything' - then they won't. But a lot of them do amazing things and achieve amazing things. They do it by not thinking about their troubles in life - and focus heavily on what they want to do. And when they focus heavily on something - they don't have time to think about having no limbs; they're just focused on their passion... and that's what I'm saying to you-

HENRY

(cries) You're right Grandma. You're right-

EDITH

(cries) And I know it's easy for me to say that - and I know I'll never know what it's like to be you and have an ability you're absolutely terrified of. But... I know if I was in your shoes; I would find something I like; and focus heavily on that. It's all about keeping your mind busy; and you won't have time to think about your ability.

(Henry agrees)

HENRY

(cries) You're right Grandma. You're right-

(Edith hugs Henry)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) Don't ever think you're a freak. And DON'T EVER give up. I will always be here for you and I love you very much-

(Henry cries with love; whilst hugging Edith)

HENRY

(hugging Edith) I love you to Grandma. Me love you to-

(Edith stops hugging Henry minutes later)

EDITH

(saddened; to Henry) And please don't start looking into getting rid of your abilities please - accept it; and find something you love; and focus everyday on it. Understand-

HENRY

(cries) Understand-

(Henry hugs Edith once again; hugging her tightly; not wanting to let go. Moments later; Henry lets go and wipes the tears off his eyes)

EDITH

(saddened; to Henry) And I know. There are countless people in your life who deliberately make you lose control - that's why I'm thinking about moving out of here; out of town...

HENRY

(cries) Yes-

EDITH

(breathes) New phone. New address. New location. New life; how's that sound?

(Henry nods his head)

EDITH

(smiles) Goodie.

(Henry smiles)

EDITH

(smiles) Come on. Let's go inside-

(Fred walks outside to the garage; and locates the hidden, unconscious body of Vince - whose four limbs are completely broken; with third degree burns on his chest. Fred jumps backwards; in fear of what Henry's true power is capable of. Fred is shocked at how gruesome Henry has hurt his father; Fred moves toward Edith's location)

FRED

(concerned; to Edith) Edith. I uh.. I uh..

EDITH

(concerned; to Fred) Fred.. What is it??

FRED

(shocked; to Edith) Can you come here for a second?? Just you??

EDITH

(concerned; to Fred) Yeah... Yeah uh sure...

(Henry grows concerned at Fred's concerning voice towards his grandmother. Henry looks worried as he watches his grandmother stand up; meanwhile Fred turns his back; to the side; and notices an unconscious, injured Bobby with broken legs. Fred is lost for word; and becomes scared of Henry. Edith makes her way to Fred's location at the garage; Henry stands up in complete worry and takes cover behind the garage; and listens to the conversation. Moments later; Edith arrives at Fred's location; and notices the deeply; scarred; injured Vince; and is frightened)

EDITH

(frightened; to Fred) Oh my God. Oh my...

FRED

(worried; to Edith) This is what your grandson... Henry... is truly capable of. Power; destruction; and severe harm...

(Henry hears Fred's words and is deeply emotionally harmed by this; panicking into what his grandmother may think of him and his powerful ability)

EDITH

(frightened; to Fred) Henry.... Henry was just trying to save me... Vince must of tried to shoot me that day... Henry just. Henry just...

(Flies start nearing Vince's unconscious body; Fred bends down and notices Vince's arms and legs are completely broken; declaring him crippled for life)

FRED

(shocked; to Edith) His legs... His arms. He is crippled. Quadriplegic... My God-

(Henry hears what he has done to his father; and feels no remorse. However; he panics into what his grandmother now thinks of him; and views him as. Edith covers her mouth in shock; and is lost for words. Henry breathes heavily in panic; and starts to cry as to whether his grandmother still loves him or not)

FRED

(shocked; to Edith) I've got to take him to the hospital... I'm just... I know Henry was protecting you... and that's good. But his power; is what frightens me-

(Edith covers her mouth in shock; fully aware of how powerful her grandson really is; and the immaculate harm he can do to people. Edith looks to the side; and notices an unconscious; severely injured Bobby - and is shocked to uncover he lied to Edith & Fred all along - for Vince's personal gain over Henry)

EDITH

(shocked; to Edith) Bobby. Was a trader. He was a damn trader. And I didn't see it.

FRED

(worried; to Edith) There's nothing you could've done Edith. Some people switch sides and some people lie into who they really are-

(Edith is shocked; and steps out the garage to the side; Henry stands in front of Edith. Edith worries that Henry had heard everything; Henry starts to panic)

Made in Highland

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) Henry... What the?

HENRY
(cries; to Edith) Grandma. Do you... Do you still love me?

EDITH
(assures Henry) Yes Henry. Of course I do... of course I do-

HENRY
(panics; to Edith) Even after... what you looked at...

EDITH
(assures Henry) Yes Henry. Of course... you were just trying to protect me that night. You were just protecting me from your father-

HENRY
(panics; to Edith) That's all I was doing Grandma. That's all I was doing... I wanted to stop him from shooting you...

EDITH
(assures Henry) I know... and I appreciate it. If you didn't stop him... I would've got shot...

(Fred steps outside and notices a panicking Henry; Fred realises Henry had heard the conversation)

FRED
(to Henry) Let me guess. You were listening to other people's conversations-

HENRY
(cries; to Fred) Fred. Listen... Hear me out--

FRED
(to Henry) What Henry?

HENRY
(cries; to Fred) I know I... I know I probably went too extreme... But he. He was going to shoot my grandma. I... I can't live without Grandma... What... What would have you done?

FRED
(to Henry) I would've beat him up to... But Henry... You need to understand...

(Henry looks at Fred; and cries. Edith holds Henry's hands)

FRED

(to Henry) Do you agree that you are a very powerful person??

HENRY

(nods head) Yes. I do.

FRED

(to Henry) You need to understand... you have the power to kill someone... easier than a normal man can. You could kill your grandmother if you wanted to; so easily if you wanted to...

HENRY

(screams to Fred) I would never do that Fred. Didn't you listen... Grandma means the world to me??? She's EVERYTHING TO ME...

(Edith is touched by Henry's sentimental feelings towards Henry)

FRED

(to Henry) I know she does. But you could kill anyone easier because of your ability...

(Edith interrupts)

EDITH

(interrupts Fred) Look Fred... Right... Wrong... There was a situation... someone was trying to shoot at me... Henry wanted to protect me and stop that bastard from shooting me. His defence mechanism was to severely hurt him... Good... Bad... Defence of someone you love... I don't know. But when you're put into that situation... what do you do?? It's all survival instincts...

(Henry agrees with his grandmother)

FRED

(to Edith) You put it all comprehensively Edith... I guess I agree-

(Henry smiles at his grandmother; and wipes the tears off his eyes)

FRED

(to Edith) Well um. Well I'm gonna take these two to the hospital. I'll let you be...

EDITH

(to Fred) See you soon...

FRED

(to Edith) See you both...

(Fred carries the unconscious bodies of Vince and Bobby; separately to the car. Edith & Henry watch Fred do so. Edith smiles at Henry; Henry smiles at Edith. Moments later; Fred drives off to the hospital. Edith looks at Henry)

EDITH

(smiles, to Henry) What shall we do now?? Watch a movie or something. Watch the telly...

HENRY

(smiles, to Edith) I would just like to talk with you. That's always fun...

EDITH

(to Henry) Righto. Let me get a cup of mocha; and we shall talk.

INT. FRED'S RESIDENCE - TELEVISION ROOM

(Henry nods his head; and agrees. Moments later; Henry is laying on his back on the sofa; whilst Edith grabs herself a mug of mocha. Moments later; Edith makes her way to the sofa; Henry sits up and makes room for his grandmother to sit; Edith sits herself on the lounge; Henry sits beside her and smiles)

EDITH

(smiles, to Henry) What are you smiling at Mister?

HENRY

(chuckles) You... You make me happy...

EDITH

(smiles, to Henry) That's good. That's good-

HENRY

(smiles, to Edith) How is your mocha Grandma? How is it?

(Edith drinks her mug of mocha; then looks at Henry)

EDITH
 (smiles, to Henry) Absolutely beautiful.
 Nothing like it...

(Edith puts her empty mug of mocha
 on the coffee table; directly in
 front of where she is sitting)

HENRY
 (sarcastically, to Edith) Mocha... Moc. ha.
 Mocha...

EDITH
 (smiles; to Henry) Mocha it is-

HENRY
 (sarcastically; to Edith) My Grandma. Loves.
 Her Mocha. Mocha. Mocha-

EDITH
 (chuckles; to Henry) Are you trying to be
 funny Henry?? You can... You can do better
 than that...

(Edith tickles Henry on the back;
 Henry laughs from the sensation
 and fidgets)

HENRY
 (laughs; to Edith) You're so funny. So. So.
 So funny..

EDITH
 (chuckles; to Henry) No. You're quite funny
 and cheeky...

(Henry chuckles and looks at
 Edith; and laughs. Edith tickles
 Henry on the chest; Henry laughs
 even more and fidgets)

EDITH
 (laughs to Henry) You cheeky man.

(Henry laughs at his grandmother;
 and continues chuckling)

HENRY
 (laughs at Edith) You cheeky woman-

(Henry & Edith laugh at each other; Henry enjoys the time he is having with his grandmother. Minutes later; Edith is flicking the TV channels; Henry is laying on his back; with his head on Edith's thigh. Henry breathes and smiles)

EDITH

(looks at TV, to Henry) I don't think there's nothing worth watching-

HENRY

(looks at TV, to Edith) I don't think so either Grandma...

EDITH

(looks at TV, to Henry) Crap again, I guess-

(Minutes later; loud noise from outside is heard. Henry jumps up; concerned for his grandmother's safety. Edith notices Henry in protection mode)

EDITH

(worried; to Henry) I heard it to-

(Henry looks at his grandmother; in protection mode)

EDITH

(worried; to Henry) It's okay. It's okay-

(Henry holds his hand out to Edith; Edith holds Henry's hand; Henry smiles in protection mode)

EDITH

(worried; to Henry) I can see you're protecting me... Thank you...

HENRY

(smiles; to Henry) I love protecting-

(Meanwhile; a knife throws in the window near Edith's location. Henry grabs Edith out of the way; and hugs her tightly. Henry grows overprotective of his grandmother; and grows agitated at the sight of trouble)

EDITH

(covered by Henry) Henry. You were right. There's trouble.

HENRY

(covering Edith) I know. I must protect you.
I must-

(Another knife is thrown in the kitchen; Henry notices and grows agitated. Henry breathes heavily)

HENRY

(protective; to Edith) Grandma. Grandma.
Hide in the room. Hide in the room...
please. Please-

(Edith obeys Henry, and makes her way to the room she is sleeping in; and hides. Henry opens Fred's front door and notices the shirtless bodybuilder man and his girlfriend; in which he identified and fought back at his police duty with Officer Smith Johnson. Henry tries to close the door tight; not wanting to fight and lose control; and to keep his grandmother safe. The bodybuilder man kicks the door open and notices a shirtless Henry; Henry glares at the bodybuilder)

BODYBUILDER

(sadistic, to Henry) HEY FREAK.

(Henry pushes the bodybuilder. The bodybuilder's girlfriend makes her way to locate Edith; Henry tries to stop her. The bodybuilder chokeholds Henry. Henry screams)

BODYBUILDER

(sadistic, to Henry) I'M STRONGER THAN YOU
FIREBOY-

(The bodybuilder begins choking Henry. Henry struggles; and loses it. Henry bites the bodybuilder's wrist and elbows the bodybuilder in the ribs. Henry screams at the bodybuilder; and pushes him to the ground. Henry bends down and repeatedly punches the bodybuilder in the face; the bodybuilder grabs Henry's jaw; and tries to break it. Henry engulfs himself in flames; the bodybuilder smiles)

BODYBUILDER

(grabs Henry's jaw, to Henry) FIREBOY-

(The bodybuilder punches Henry in the stomach; Henry groans. Meanwhile; the girlfriend locates Edith's hiding spot)

BODYBUILDER GIRLFRIEND

(sadistic; to Edith) YOU MUST BE THE GRANNY, YOU BITCH-

EDITH

(to bodybuilder girlfriend) Look Darling. Please. Act mature. This man you're with... he ain't good for you...

BODYBUILDER GIRLFRIEND

(to Edith) Oh he is. My man is good for me. He will beat Henry big time-

(Meanwhile; Henry becomes infuriated and punches the bodybuilder hard in the face and chest; whilst inflamed. The bodybuilder cuts Henry in the stomach with a knife; Henry screams in agony; and looks at his injured stomach. Henry looks back up at the bodybuilder; and goes berserk - continuing to punch the bodybuilder hard in the face; Henry groans in pain; the bodybuilder grabs Henry's wrist; Henry ignites his wrist in flames; thus the bodybuilder gets hurt. Henry breaks the bodybuilder's legs hard and firm; the bodybuilder groans. Henry stands up; grabs the bodybuilder by the legs; and drags him outside; the bodybuilder is down. Thunder cracks - Henry then continues punching the bodybuilder in the forehead; thus knocking him out. Henry enraged and angered; breathes and calms down; diminishing the flames off his body. Henry returns inside minutes later; and locates his grandmother minutes later; with the bodybuilder's girlfriend. The bodybuilder's girlfriend pretends to have feelings for Henry)

BODYBUILDER GIRLFRIEND

(smiles; to Henry) Hey handsome.

HENRY

(angrily; to bodybuilder girlfriend) GET OUT.

BODYBUILDER GIRLFRIEND

(smiles; to Henry) You're a hot man. Very.
Damn. Hot-

(The bodybuilder girlfriend walks toward Henry; and puts her hand on Henry's bare chest. Henry grabs it quickly with force; the bodybuilder girlfriend becomes worried)

HENRY

(angrily; to bodybuilder girlfriend) GET
OUT. NOWWW-

(The bodybuilder girlfriend cries at Henry squeezing her hand tight. She cries; takes her hand off Henry's; and leaves; but stops to yell at Henry)

BODYBUILDER GIRLFRIEND

(screams at Henry) YOU GODDAMN DEVIL. YOU
DEVIL. MY BOYFRIEND WILL BEAT YOUR GRANDMA
UP NEXT-

(This threat angers Henry)

HENRY

(angrily; to bodybuilder girlfriend) NO
YOU'RE NOT. GET OUT. NOW-

(Henry stomps towards the bodybuilder girlfriend. Afraid; she leaves out the front door; and notices her unconscious; injured; shirtless boyfriend at the front. The bodybuilder girlfriend screams; as she cries over her injured boyfriend. She dials the ambulance on her phone; and makes her way to the hospital for her boyfriend's recovery. Henry looks at his grandmother; and holds out his hand to her. Edith holds Henry's hand, as he holds her up standing. Edith looks shocked by all that has happened)

EDITH

(worried; to Henry) There seems to always be
trouble for you Henry.. It makes me sad...

HENRY

(saddened; to Henry) I know. I know-

(Edith notices the deep cut on Henry's stomach; Henry groans in pain)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Oh Goodness. Your stomach... It's... It's-

(Edith puts her hand on Henry's injured stomach; Henry groans)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Oh Goodness. No. Henry... Lay down on the lounge. I believe Fred has got a first aid in the kitchen I can use-

(Henry obeys his grandmother; and lays down on the sofa. Edith returns minutes later; and sits on the ottoman beside Henry. Henry groans in pain)

EDITH

(worried; to Henry) I'm sorry Henry. I'm sorry-

HENRY

(groans to Edith) Not your fault Grandma. Not your fault-

(Edith applies antiseptic cream to Henry's stomach wounds. Henry cries in pain; Edith worries)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) I'm sorry Henry. But the antiseptic cream is supposed to help clear wounds and cuts.

(Henry cries from the pain; and holds his grandmother's hand for comfort)

EDITH

(holding Henry's hand) I know. I'm sorry....

(Edith applies one more dab of antiseptic cream to Henry's stomach. Henry screams in agony; Edith cries)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Okay. Okay... Okay I'm done with the antiseptic cream. Sit up for me-

(Henry listens to his grandmother; and sits up. Moments later; Edith wraps Henry's stomach up with a bandage. Henry breathes in pain; Edith finishes)

EDITH

(assures Henry) All done Henry. All done. No more-

(Henry breathes and looks at his wrapped stomach)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Just rest it off. Just rest it off now-

HENRY

(groans to Edith) Thankyou Grandma... Thankyou.

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) It's okay. Your body is strong. You'll fight this pain fast-fast-

(Henry smiles at his grandmother; Henry yawns)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) I think it's time for you to head to bed... you're tired... and I'm quite tired as well.

HENRY

(smiles at Edith) Okay Grandma... Um... Have a good sleep... night. A good night sleep-

EDITH

(smiles to Henry) I will. Goodnight-

(Henry groans as he hugs his grandmother)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) Goodnight Henry. I love you.

HENRY

(hugging Edith) Me... Love you to.

(15 minutes later; Edith and Henry go to sleep. THE NEXT MORNING - Henry is heavily sleeping; recovering from his wounds. Edith wakes up and walks into the kitchen; and is stunned to find Fred there. Fred is shocked of Henry's stomach wounds; and worries what incident had occurred last night whilst he was at work)

EDITH
(shocked; to Fred) Fred-

FRED
(annoyed; to Edith) What happened last night? Whilst I was away-

EDITH
(worried; to Fred) Fred.... We... were attacked again. Henry tried to protect me; that was it.... He got hurt trying to as well-

FRED
(concerned; to Edith) Yeah I could tell by Henry's stomach wounds... (compliments Edith) Good bandage-wrapping by the way-

EDITH
(worried; to Edith) Thanks-

FRED
(worried; to Edith) Look Edith. I uh-

EDITH
(interrupts Fred) Sorry Fred... I ah. I think Henry and I might leave this morning... when he wakes up. I will start packing his and my bag. I uh-

(Fred is shocked to hear Edith's decision to leave)

FRED
(shocked; to Edith) Why?

EDITH
(saddened; to Fred) Fred I uh. Trouble always seems to come to Henry all the time. I don't want him to live a life where he's always got to fight to protect me; and get harmed whilst doing so-

FRED
(to Edith) I'm sure he loves to do it though-

EDITH
(saddened; to Fred) Well I don't like seeing him get hurt all time time. I don't like it as his grandmother... I uh. I've got a friend living out of town... away from Taylor. She said Henry and I can stay there for a while... until we get set up-

FRED
(agrees with Edith) Yeah that's probably a good idea. Let Henry live a peaceful, happy life. Where he doesn't have to fight all the time. Where he can start a new life... and be happy-

EDITH

(to Fred) Thanks for your understanding. And thanks for your accommodation as well. I really do appreciate it. And Henry does to-

(Fred smiles at Edith)

FRED

(to Edith) No worries. Anytime-

(Henry wakes up, and stretches his arms and legs. Henry sits up and notices his grandmother)

HENRY

(smiles) Good morning Grandma-

EDITH

(to Henry) Good morning Henry. How are your wounds?

(Henry looks at his stomach wounds; then looks back up at Edith)

HENRY

(smiles at Edith) Getting better Grandma. Getting so much better-

EDITH

(to Henry) That's good. That's good-

FRED

(to Henry) Good morning Henry-

HENRY

(to Fred) Good morning Fred. Good morning-

EDITH

(smiles at Henry) Now Henry. You and I are about to embark on a new life.

HENRY

(questions Edith) We are?

EDITH

(smiles at Henry) Yes. I'm really getting sick and tired of all the trouble that comes to you. It seems like this town is just infested with people... trying to bring and tear you down. And I don't like it... So we're moving out of town.

(Henry agrees with Edith; and is intrigued by the new life he is about to embark on with his grandmother)

HENRY

(smiles at Edith) Awesome-

EDITH

(to Henry) We're going to stay at a friend's place, alright. Your mother's friend's place actually. She's very nice-

HENRY

(smiles at Edith) Okay. That's fine. As long as I'm with you-

EDITH

(to Henry) I just want you to have a better life.

(Henry smiles at Edith. Edith notices Henry's shirtlessness; and wishes Henry to be dressed in something formal for Suzie)

EDITH

(to Henry) Now you need to dress in something formal please... I'll go put some clothes on your bed...

(Henry listens to his grandmother and stands up. Moments later; Edith puts a blue plain shirt and black pants on Henry's bed. Minutes later; Henry changes into them; and puts on his black joggers. Edith finishes packing the bags and returns to the lounge room where Henry and Fred are waiting by. Edith is wearing a blue floral top with black pants, with black loafers)

EDITH

(to Henry) You ready to go??

HENRY

(smiles at Edith) Yes.

EDITH

(smiles at Henry) Righto. Let's go... (to Fred) Once again Fred, thank you.

FRED

(to Edith) No worries. Obviously if you're in any trouble... or if Henry gets wounded again - ring me up.

EDITH

(smiles at Fred) Sure will. Thanks.

HENRY

(to Fred) Hey there Fred. I know we ah. Haven't... I mean I know I've done wrong to you... and I'm sorry. I am really sorry. But I just want to say thank you for all that you've done to me. I really appreciate it-

FRED

(to Henry) No worries Henry. And like your grandmother says - accept yourself for who you are. And have a good new life. It's been nice knowing you-

(Henry smiles at Fred. Edith smiles at Fred)

EDITH

(to Fred) Thanks Fred. Henry and I really appreciate it. Um ah; since we don't we have a car - could you drive us to my friend's place?

FRED

(to Edith) Yes sure. By all means. Let's go-

(Moments later - Fred drives Edith and Henry to the friend's place. MINUTES LATER - they arrive at Suzie's house)

FRED

(to Edith) Well we're here.

EDITH

(to Fred) Yes. Here we are.. thanks Fred again... for everything.

FRED

(to Edith) Oh no worries Edith. No worries. Just you both have a good new life now.

EDITH

(to Fred) Thanks Doctor.

(Fred laughs at Edith's comments. Henry joins in for a chuckle)

FRED

(to Edith) Well uh. Bye again.

(Edith and Henry hop out of Fred's sedan car. Henry helps out Edith and holds the packing bags. Edith stands outside by Fred's driving window)

EDITH

(to Fred) Thanks again Fred. Beth would be happy by all that you've done for me as her mother, and for Henry, her son.

FRED
 (smiles at Edith) Thanks. No worries. And again... any trouble... or if you're in any danger... or if Henry is injured yet again - call me up.

EDITH
 (smiles at Fred) I will. Thanks.

FRED
 (to Henry) Righto. Bye Henry.

HENRY
 (to Fred) Bye.

(Minutes later, Fred drives off in his sedan)

PART 2 ENDS.

 #PART 3##

INT. FRONT OF SUZIE'S RESIDENCE

(Henry & Edith are waiting by Suzie's residence. Suzie, an old friend of the late Beth - renowned accountant for Beth; lives in a luxurious two-storey house with her daughter Jaffa. The exterior of the mansion is painted pale blue with white bricks covering the roof, lengths and widths of the house. Suzie notices Edith & Henry are outside waiting by the house; she walks out the front to acknowledge them. Edith & Henry notice Suzie. Suzie is wearing a black shirt and black jeans, with black sandals)

SUZIE
 (smiles at Edith) Hello there Edith. How... How are you??

(Suzie hugs Edith. Henry watches on over his grandmother. Moments later; they stop hugging and look at each other)

EDITH
 (smiles, looks at Suzie's luxurious house)
 Wow... You're doing well for yourself. Wow..

SUZIE
 (to Edith) Oh thanks. Thanks Edith... I worked really hard for this...

EDITH

(to Suzie) Oh I bet you have. I haven't seen you last since Beth's funeral.

(Suzie remembers her late friend Beth - the best friend she had since school; the woman who taught her to cook; the woman who stood up for her when she encountered school bullies; the woman she asked for friendly advice)

SUZIE

(saddened to Edith) Yeah. Yeah we haven't seen each other since the funeral. I miss her so much... But... But it must have been harder for you and Henry...

EDITH

(to Suzie) Oh it was. (looks at Henry) It was hard for both of us.

(Henry looks at Edith; and becomes sad when thinking about his late mother. Suzie looks at Henry)

SUZIE

(to Henry) Hello there Henry. (chuckles to Henry) I've heard about you but have never met you. Now that's funny...

(Henry, Edith & Suzie chuckle. Henry shakes Suzie's hand; Suzie feels the grip of Henry's shake)

SUZIE

(chuckles to Edith) Well your grandson is very strong Edith...

(Edith chuckles. Henry becomes socially anxious around Suzie due to his unsociable trait. An awkward silence...)

SUZIE

(to Edith) But anyway. Welcome to my lovely home. I've set areas for you both... Come inside--

INT. SUZIE'S RESIDENCE - LIVING ROOM

(They walk inside - the interior of the house is coloured royal purple; this includes the living room; and kitchen.

Edith notices Jaffa; the daughter of Suzie with whom herself has not met. Henry's social anxiety rises; and tries to stay calm; keeping by his grandmother's side. Jaffa is wearing a pink tshirt and blue jeans, and is barefoot)

EDITH

(to Jaffa) Hello there young woman. What is your name?

(Jaffa remains by her mother's side)

JAFFA

(to Edith) Oh Jaffa... My name is Jaffa - nice to meet you...

(Edith shakes hands with Jaffa. Henry looks at his grandmother from behind; and his social anxiety grows)

SUZIE

(smiles to Edith) Well now would be an excellent time to get to know each other... Wouldn't it?

EDITH

(nods at Suzie) Yeah it would be...

SUZIE

(smiles) Sit down. Please... And we will get to know each other...

(Suzie sits on the lounge; Jaffa sits beside her. Henry looks worried at his grandmother; and sits beside his grandmother on the lounge. Henry's social anxiety grows more)

SUZIE

(to Edith & Henry) Now first off... I'll start. I am Suzie... I was (to Henry) your mother's accountant. (to Edith) Which you knew already. (to Henry) It's very nice to meet you Henry. It'll be great to get to know you...

HENRY

(socially anxious; to Suzie) Nice to... Nice to meet you to-

SUZIE

(to Jaffa) Go on sweetie. Introduce yourself...

JAFFA
 (to Edith & Henry) Hello all. I'm... I'm
 Jaffa...

SUZIE
 (to Jaffa) And what is Jaffa doing with her
 life now...

JAFFA
 (to Edith & Henry) I am studying to be a
 doctor-

EDITH
 (to Jaffa) Oh really Jaffa. That's
 exciting.

JAFFA
 (to Edith) Yes. Yes.... It is very
 exciting...

EDITH
 (chuckles to Jaffa) You'll have to tell me
 all the doctor terms you know one day.
 Doctor Jaffa...

(Jaffa laughs. Henry is in another
 world; and looks outside the
 window; and breathes - trying to
 keep calm from his social anxiety
 overpowering him. Jaffa begins to
 like Edith as a friend)

JAFFA
 (smiles to Edith) Oh I will tell you all
 there is I know about being a doctor. Doctor
 terms. Doctor everything...

(Edith looks at Henry. Suzie
 notices Henry's quietness; and
 worries; Edith notices Suzie's
 concerning look over Henry)

EDITH
 (assures Suzie) He's just shy Suzie. Henry's
 just very shy...

SUZIE
 (to Henry) It's all good Henry. We don't
 bite-

(Henry looks at Suzie)

SUZIE
 (to Henry) Tell us about yourself Henry...
 The son of my late best friend-

(Henry breathes)

HENRY
 (to Jaffa & Suzie) I... I'm Henry. I... I
 like-

SUZIE
 (curious to Henry) What do you do for a
 living?

HENRY
 (to Suzie) I am... I'm looking for work...

(Edith interrupts)

EDITH
 (to Suzie) Henry is seeking work.

SUZIE
 (curious to Henry) Well uh... What do you
 want to do with your life?? Any career
 aspirations?

(Henry shrugs his shoulders and
 shakes his head; unsure of what he
 wants to do with his life. Edith
 understands Henry's body gestures)

EDITH
 (to Suzie) He's unsure of what he wants to
 do as of yet.

SUZIE
 (smiles to Henry) Yeah well Henry... no
 rush. No rush at all...

JAFFA
 (excited; to Edith) I can't wait until I
 tell you all about the doctor terms I know.
 I can't wait. I really can't wait Edith....
 Edith. I can't wait-

EDITH
 (smiles at Edith) I know. I can tell by your
 voice.

(Jaffa smiles in excitement. Henry
 continues looking outside the
 window; his social anxiety is
 getting the better of him. Henry
 gulps. Jaffa begins to rattle off
 her medical knowledge to Edith;
 from her brain. Suzie looks
 worried at Henry; Henry refuses to
 look at Suzie. Suzie then turns
 her attention back to her
 daughter. Edith's attention is
 heavily focused on Jaffa)

JAFFA

(questions Edith) Okay. Okay. Now Edith... what is the term 'benign?'

EDITH

(chuckles to Jaffa) Oh God... I don't know. I'm unsure. Um... Magnificent medical discovery?'

JAFFA

(chuckles to Edith) No. It means 'not cancerous.' So 'not cancerous' at all. That's what it means.

EDITH

(smiles at Jaffa) Oh well that's good. That's a good thing.

(Henry watches his grandmother; and breathes. Suzie senses something seriously wrong with Henry; and looks at him)

JAFFA

(questions Edith) Okay Edith. What is?? What does 'malignant' mean?

EDITH

(thinks; to Jaffa) Um. Oh goodness Jaffa... I don't know. I don't know Doctor Jaffa. These terms are too technical for me...

(Jaffa laughs)

JAFFA

(chuckles to Edith) Okay then. Well 'malignant' means something that is cancerous. Something on the skin that is cancerous...

EDITH

(to Jaffa) Oh well that's no good.

(Henry stands up; and makes his way out the backyard. Henry opens the backyard door; and notices a greenery balcony - with a large outdoor seating area; overlooking the grass. Henry sits on the bottom step of the balcony; and looks up at the sky. Moments later; Suzie notices Henry's sudden disappearance. Edith and Jaffa continue talking to each other. Suzie becomes worried about Henry; and makes her way outside the backyard.

She notices Henry sitting outside on the step on the balcony from the indoor window. Moments later; she opens the backyard door. Henry hears the door open; and looks behind at Suzie; in fear and shock)

INT. BACKYARD - SUZIE'S RESIDENCE

SUZIE

(shocked) Woah... Woah. Henry. Woah. I won't... I won't hurt you...

(Henry breathes and looks front-ways at the grass. Suzie worries about Henry)

SUZIE

(weary of Henry) You are. You're not really the talkative type are ya??

(Henry shakes his head)

SUZIE

(weary of Henry) Neither am I. Neither am I...

(Henry doesn't talk; and listens to Suzie. Suddenly; Suzie hears her daughter from inside)

JAFFA

(calling from inside) Mum. Mummy. Mum. Where are you??

SUZIE

(shouts from outside) Outside sweetie. Outside...

(Jaffa opens the backyard door. She notices her mother and Henry outside at the balcony. Edith notices her socially anxious grandson by the balcony step)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Oh Henry... There you are...

(Henry looks at his grandmother; and smiles)

EDITH

(to Suzie & Jaffa) Hey. Um. Is it alright if Henry and I have time together??

SUZIE

(agrees with Edith) Yes sure. Jaffa and I will be inside.... (to Jaffa) Let's go inside...

(Suzie goes back inside with her daughter; and closes the door behind herself. Edith looks worried at Henry)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Hey. Henry. You look so anxious. It's the social anxiety isn't it??

(Henry nods his head at his grandmother)

HENRY

(looks at Edith) Yes Grandma. It is. It is...

EDITH

(assures Henry) I'm there Henry. It's all practice. Isn't it easier when I'm there??

HENRY

(looks at Edith) A lot easier. But still... still worrying...

EDITH

(assures Henry) It will be fine Henry. It will be fine. I know you may feel out of place... new environment... new people... new surroundings. But these people are nice. They're nice. Everything will be okay. No trouble here...

(Henry cries in agreement with his grandmother)

HENRY

(cries to Edith) Okay... Good... I don't want any trouble... No trouble...

EDITH

(to Henry) We're out 25k's from Taylor. Bushland. Nothing... and I mean nothing is here. Just dirt grass and trees..

(Henry smiles at Edith; and nods his head in agreement)

EDITH

(to Henry) It'll all be fine. It's gonna take a bit to get comfortable here. But it will get better. The social anxiety will go away. It'll be a better life-

HENRY

(cries to Edith) It'll be fine because you'll be here. You will be here-

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly; and breathes - and tries to remain strong. Henry stops hugging his grandmother minutes later)

EDITH

(assures Henry) It'll be fine Mister. It'll be fine...

(Edith opens the backyard door minutes later - Jaffa and Suzie return back outside on their greenery balcony. Edith is impressed by the balcony. Henry wipes his tears; and looks up at his grandmother. Henry stands up beside his grandmother; Jaffa looks at Henry)

EDITH

(looks at greenery balcony; to Suzie) So uh... this is your beautiful balcony. I really love the greenery...

SUZIE

(smiles at Edith) Thanks... Well it is my favourite colour... It really is...

EDITH

(to Suzie) It's beautiful. Very natural like...

SUZIE

(to Edith & Henry) Well uh. I can make Chickpea Curry tonight for din-din. If anyone's interested...

EDITH

(smiles at Suzie) Yes... Yes sure...

SUZIE

(to Henry) What about you Henry??

HENRY

(nods head; to Suzie) That's... That's fine...

SUZIE

(smiles at Henry) Awesome... All planned out...

INT. KITCHEN OF SUZIE'S RESIDENCE

Made in Highland

(HOURS PASS - it is now 7pm at night. Jaffa; Edith and Henry are seated at the dining room table. Dinner is being served; Edith serves all three servings to Jaffa; Edith and Henry)

EDITH
(to Suzie) Thanks Suzie-

JAFFA
(to Suzie) Thanks Mummy.

HENRY
(to Suzie) Thanks Suzie-

(Suzie smiles over everyone's appreciation for her meal and hospitality. Suzie sits at the dining room table; with her sewing)

EDITH
(to Suzie) I'd like to start with grace before we eat please.

(Suzie agrees with Edith's religious wishes)

SUZIE
(to Edith) Yes sure. Go ahead-

EDITH
(to everyone) Please bow your heads...

(Henry, Jaffa, Suzie and Edith herself; bow each of their heads to pray)

EDITH
(praying) Dear Lord Heaven Father. I'd like to thank you for this meal tonight, and all that you have done for each of us this very day. I pray all these things in your son's name - Amen.

HENRY, JAFFA & SUZIE
(out loud) Amen-

(The four begin eating their meals)

SUZIE
(to Henry) You know Henry. This was your mother's recipe... She gave me this recipe.

HENRY
(socially anxious; to Suzie) Oh really?

SUZIE

(to Henry) Yeah it was. Her meals taste so damn good. You can just tell with meals; this one is a "Beth" meal...

(Edith chuckles. Henry smiles)

EDITH

(to Suzie) Yes. Beth was a very good cook. My favourite meal she made me was Chicken Stir Fry. Oh that was... that was so damn good.

SUZIE

(smiles) It taste good just thinking about it...

JAFFA

(to Edith) Edith. My favourite meal Beth made me was Pork Chow Mein. So yummy. So damn yummy-

SUZIE

(to Jaffa) Yeah I liked that to... and you Henry??

HENRY

(socially anxious; to Suzie) Um...

EDITH

(chuckles; to Suzie) Oh he loves the meaty recipes. He loves his meat...

(Henry smiles; and chuckles with Edith. Suzie notices how happy Henry is around his grandmother)

HENRY

(chuckles; to Edith) I like the Steak Stir Fry Mum used to make... So damn good...

EDITH

(chuckles; to Suzie) See. Steak. Anything meat... Henry likes...

(Henry chuckles at his grandmother)

EDITH

(chuckles; to Henry) What... It's true... ain't it??

HENRY

(chuckles; to Edith) Yes... It's true...

(pauses)

SUZIE

(to Edith & Henry) Well I both got your beds ready. Two spare rooms I've got??

EDITH

(to Suzie) Oh thank you Suzie. Thanks for your accommodation.

SUZIE

(smiles; to Edith) No I'd be happy to help. I'd be so damn happy to help...

EDITH

(smiles; to Suzie) Okay. Well um... I am getting a bit snoozy. So uh. I might have to head to bed... I think...

SUZIE

(to Edith) Okay. I'll show you your room now. Come on-

(Edith stands up; and follows Suzie to the room she will be sleeping in. The room is crystal blue; with elegant blue crystals and sculptures surrounding the room; with a large flat 32" TV screen. Henry and Jaffa look at each other; an awkward silence. Jaffa starts talking)

JAFFA

(to Henry) So uh. You know... You do look a lot like your mother.

(Henry becomes socially anxious around Jaffa; and doesn't know what to say)

HENRY

(socially anxious; to Jaffa) Oh I... I uh... I-

JAFFA

(smiles at Henry) I won't bite.

(Henry smiles at Jaffa. Edith returns to the dining room table with Suzie; where Henry and Jaffa are still seated at the dining room table)

EDITH

(to Henry) Righto. Henry... I'm off to bed...

HENRY

(stands up) Goodnight Grandma. Have a good night sleep. Me love you...

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly. Edith smiles as she hugs Henry; and stops minutes later)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) I love you to Mister. Don't ever forget it... and Suzie will be showing you the room you will be sleeping in. Got it?

HENRY

(to Edith) Okay. Love you Grandma. Love you.

(Henry hugs Edith another time; one last hug for the day. Henry stops hugging Edith minutes later)

EDITH

(smiles; to Suzie) He loves his hugs.

(Henry chuckles with Edith)

HENRY

(chuckles; to Edith) I do Grandma. I do...

(Edith smiles)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Well Goodnight. Goodnight Henry. Have a good night sleep-

HENRY

(smiles; to Edith) Goodnight Grandma. Goodnight-

(Edith heads to bed moments later)

JAFFA

(smiles) Mumma. I can show Henry his room. You can head to bed if you want-

(Suzie smiles as she acknowledges her daughter helping make Henry more comfortable)

SUZIE

(smiles; to Jaffa) Righto. Good on you sweetie. Goodnight. Love you-

JAFFA

(smiles; to Suzie) I love you Mumma-

(Suzie heads to bed minutes later. Jaffa looks at Henry)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Let me show you the room you will be sleeping in...

(Henry follows Jaffa to the room; in which he will be sleeping in. Henry walks into a royal purple-coloured room with statues of royalty; with a big flat 32" TV in the room; with a double-bed. Henry looks at the white quilts and blankets on the bed he will be sleeping in; and looks at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(to Henry) So uh. As you've seen - you've got a double-bed; and a large TV if you ever want to watch something on the TV. Like movies yeah... I wouldn't watch the news. I mean I wouldn't watch the news... it's depressing to say the least-

(Henry chuckles at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(confused; to Henry) What?? What did I say that was so funny?

HENRY

(chuckles; to Jaffa) That the news... That the news... That the news is depressing-

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Henry) Well it is. I mean I think it is-

(Henry holds out his hand toward Jaffa; Jaffa puts her hand on Henry's; Henry shakes her hand lightly)

HENRY

(shaking Jaffa's hand) So uh. Um. Jaffa. Is that how I pronounce it?

JAFFA

(shaking Henry's hand) Yes. That's it. That's it-

(Henry begins to develop feelings for Jaffa; and doesn't want to let go)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Um... Okay... You can let me go now.

(Embarrassed, Henry stops shaking Jaffa's hand)

HENRY

(embarrassed; to Jaffa) Oh sorry.

(Jaffa smiles at Henry; Henry smiles)

JAFFA
(to Henry) Well Goodnight Henry...

HENRY
(smiles at Jaffa) Goodnight...

(Jaffa closes the door. Henry begins to love Jaffa; and smiles as he hops into bed; and takes his joggers off; making himself barefoot)

HENRY
(whispers to himself) I like her. I really, really like her-

(An excited Henry smiles; lays down; and closes his eyes. Henry falls asleep minutes later. IT IS NOW 2AM IN THE MORNING...)

JAFFA
(schizophrenic; screams) Mumma. The monsters. The monsters... No... No... go away...

(Jaffa screams; Suzie wakes up from her daughter's screams as she worries. Suzie stands up and makes her way to her daughter's room - Jaffa is standing up in her room; screaming at monsters. Suzie approaches her daughter in a schizophrenic episode)

SUZIE
(to Jaffa) My darling Suzie. It's okay. It's okay. I'm here. I'm here...

JAFFA
(schizophrenic; screams) Monsters. I see monsters.. Right there... Right by the window...

(Jaffa points at the window where she sees monsters; nothing is there; all in Jaffa's head and schizophrenic episode)

SUZIE
(worries; to Jaffa) Nothing is there Jaffa. Nothing is there sweetie. Just me and you in this room.

JAFFA
(schizophrenic; screams) No I see it. I see the monsters. I see. CAN'T YOU SEE THE MONSTER...

(Jaffa suddenly sees her mother Suzie as a monster during her schizophrenic episode; and smacks her mother. Suzie groans from her daughter's smacks and slaps towards her)

JAFFA

(to Suzie) GO AWAY YOU MONSTER... GO AWAY...

(Jaffa throws a peg basket at her mother's face; Suzie screams as she gets hit)

SUZIE

(cries; to Jaffa) JAFFA. NO DARLING. It's your mother darling. Your mother. Nothing will hurt you... I promise. I'm here. I'm here.. I'm right here...

(Jaffa screams at her mother even louder. Henry wakes up and hears Jaffa screaming at her mother; and believes they are just having a fight. Henry sits up; concerned and worried; and stays sitting up on his bed)

SUZIE

(cries; to Jaffa) JAFFA. NO DARLING. NO...

(Jaffa pushes her mother down to the window; Suzie screams as she sees the height from the window to the ground; an extremely high downfall. Suzie screams in fear of her death caused by her schizophrenic daughter)

SUZIE

(screams to Jaffa) Jaffa. Please no.. No darling. Nothing is there.. believe me-

(Suzie lightly pushes her daughter down on the floor; and manages to escape; and keep her distance. Suzie hides from her daughter; afraid and unsure of what her daughter will do to her. Edith wakes up hearing all the commotion and screaming; she opens the bedroom door and notices an enraged Jaffa; very different to the young woman she had just met yesterday. Edith uses her counselling skills to try to calm Jaffa down)

EDITH

(concerned; to Jaffa) Jaffa darling, It's me Edith. What's the matter?

(An injured Suzie; cries and looks at Edith)

SUZIE

(cries to Edith) My daughter.. She's schizophrenic. She's having an episode. You're a counsellor aren't you... please help my girl...

EDITH

(concerned; to Suzie) Yes sure.

(Henry exits the room as he hears his grandmother's voice; wanting his morning hug. Meanwhile; Edith approaches Jaffa)

EDITH

(concerned; to Jaffa) Jaffa Darling. It's okay. Nothing's going to hurt you. It's not real... whatever you're seeing... is not real... it's not REAL. It's not REAL...

(Jaffa's schizophrenic episode gets worse; as she views Edith as a witch; her deepest fear)

JAFFA

(screams at Edith) YOU WITCH. KEEP AWAY FROM ME. KEEP AWAY FROM ME. KEEP IT AWAY-

(Henry notices a different Jaffa in her room; where Edith and Suzie are. Henry is shocked of the now enraged Jaffa having attacked her mother; and Jaffa screaming at his grandmother. Jaffa continues screaming at Edith)

JAFFA

(screams at Edith) GET AWAY FROM ME. YOU WITCH. YOU WITCH. SORCEROUS WITCH. GET AWAY...

(Jaffa runs to the kitchen and grabs a knife. Edith, Suzie, and Henry follow an enraged Jaffa. Henry is shocked; and lost for words - worried of his grandmother being hurt by his grandmother's attempt on counselling Jaffa; to stop the schizophrenic episode. Suzie notices Jaffa with a knife aimed at Edith; Suzie screams)

SUZIE

(screams at Jaffa) JAFFA DARLING. NO... NO DARLING. No.

(Suzie tries to stop Jaffa; but Jaffa aims the knife at Suzie. Suzie screams and puts her hands up in fear; Jaffa aims the knife at Edith; Henry screams; not wanting his grandmother to be attacked; and grabs the knife out of Jaffa's hand. Jaffa screams; and views Henry as a tiger attacking her)

JAFFA

(schizophrenic; screams at Henry) GET AWAY FROM ME. YOU TIGER-

(Jaffa cuts Henry in the stomach; Henry screams in agony as he holds his stomach in pain. Henry groans in agony and takes the knife out of Jaffa's hand. Suzie cries in frantic)

SUZIE

(frantic to Henry) Oh NO... NO... I AM SORRY.... I am sorry Henry...

(Henry groans; Jaffa kicks Henry in the stomach. Henry feels the flames rise inside his body; Henry senses a loss of control within his abilities; and runs outside. Edith reads Henry's gestures; and can sense Henry is about to lose control)

EDITH

(concerned; to Suzie) Oh no.. Oh no...

(Suzie cries to Edith; and is concerned about Henry; deeply in regret for the pain her daughter has inflicted on Edith's grandson)

SUZIE

(cries; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Darling. Stop.
Please Stop-

(Jaffa screams at her mother; and
knocks her out; whilst hitting her
mother's head with the broom.
Edith is shocked; and is deeply
concerned)

EDITH

(to Jaffa) Darling... Jaffa... No. There is
no trouble here... Nothing is going to hurt
you. I promise...

JAFFA

(schizophrenic; screams at Edith) Yes there
is. YOU ALLL!!

(Edith closes the back door; and
tries to keep Jaffa away from
Henry; afraid it will result in
Jaffa being severely burnt by
Henry's powerful ability)

JAFFA

(schizophrenic; screams at Edith) LET ME OUT
AND GET THAT TIGER NOW... I WILL GET HIM
AFTER I GET YOU...

(Edith tries to stop Jaffa; Jaffa
smacks Edith down; injuring
Edith's stomach. Edith cries in
pain)

EDITH

(cries to Jaffa) Jaffa. Please... I can... I
can help you... Please... Please... No-

JAFFA

(schizophrenic; screams at Edith) SHUT UP
WITCH. THE TIGER WILL DIE NOW...

(Jaffa approaches outside; and
notices Henry. Henry is breathing
to calm down; avoiding a potential
loss of control within his
abilities. Jaffa approaches Henry
outside)

JAFFA

(schizophrenic; to Henry) YOU TIGER. YOU'RE
DEAD. YOU ARE DEAD...

(Henry begs Jaffa to not harm him;
deeply afraid he will hurt her)

HENRY

(begs Jaffa) Please... Jaffa.. Please don't hurt me... Please... Please--

(Henry begins to stress big-time. Henry tries to breathe; and remain calm)

JAFFA

(schizophrenic; screams at Henry) HOW BOUT NO???

(Jaffa screams as she pushes Henry down. Henry falls down to the ground; Henry dodges Jaffa's kick to his stomach; and stands back up. Henry begins panicking; and tries to escape from Jaffa. Henry approaches the fence; Jaffa throws a basketball hard at Henry's back; Henry groans; Henry turns back around & tries to escape; Jaffa throws a tennis ball at Henry's stomach hard; Henry screams in pain. Jaffa pushes Henry to the fence; restricting him with her arms - Henry continues to scream as Jaffa punches Henry's stomach wounds harder and harder. Henry screams from the pain; and loses it - engulfing himself into flames; accidentally bolting out flames from his chest to Jaffa's chest. Jaffa screams in excruciating agony. Jaffa falls to the ground on the knees; and screams from the pain - now viewing him during her schizophrenic episode as a dragon)

JAFFA

(schizophrenic; screaming in agony) YOU DRAGON-

(Henry looks down at his inflamed; shirtless self and is embarrassed & ashamed. Henry starts to panic; as he hears Jaffa scream louder and louder in agony from the wounds he had accidentally inflicted on her. Afraid; Henry screams for his grandmother)

HENRY

(panics; screams) GRANDMA. GRANDMA. GRANDMA--

(Edith struggles to get up; and panics as she fears the worse. She groans as she gets up; and looks at an unconscious; injured Suzie. Edith hears Henry's screams of fear; as she makes her way outside. Henry manages to diminish the flames himself by using his grandmother's calming technique. Edith arrives outside - and finds the worse - her grandson having lost control again; severely hurting Jaffa. Jaffa continues to scream in agony; Edith looks at Henry; Henry panics to himself and looks at a screaming Jaffa; within minute Jaffa becomes unconscious. Henry becomes frantic)

HENRY

(frantic) I DIDN'T... I DIDN'T...

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Henry. Henry. Henry. Listen to me... Listen to me...

(Henry listens to his grandmother in fear; Henry cries to himself)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) I'm sorry this happened to you Henry... I'm sorry. I. uh... I wanted a better life for you and there's more trouble... I'm so sorry...

HENRY

(cries; to Edith) I didn't mean it. I tried... I tried to get away from her...

(Henry groans in even more agony. Edith worries as she looks at her injured grandson's stomach; with cut wounds all over)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Your stomach.. Your stomach...

(Henry cries in agony. Edith puts her palm on Henry's injured stomach; Edith notices the teared remains of Henry's plain blue t-shirt on the ground)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) I've got to get antiseptic cream on that stomach of yours very soon before it gets affected...

HENRY
 (groans to Edith) But what about her mum?
 The Mum...

EDITH
 (concerned; to Henry) She's been knocked
 out. Jaffa whacked her hard...

HENRY
 (groans to Edith) Did you know Grandma???
 About her...

EDITH
 (concerned to Henry) Not her
 schizophrenia.... We've all got issues
 Henry... I need to help her overcome it like
 I help you control your abilities...

HENRY
 (groans to Edith) Yeah--

(Edith looks at the severely burnt
 Jaffa; and pulls out her phone.
 Henry worries into what his
 grandmother is doing. Henry
 worries even more)

HENRY
 (concerned; to Edith) Grandma.... Grandma
 what??

EDITH
 (to Henry) Henry. Calm down... It's okay.
 I'm just going to call Fred to take Jaffa to
 the hospital...

HENRY
 (cries; to Edith) Grandma... I tried to
 avoid it... I really did... I...

EDITH
 (to Henry) Henry. It's okay. I wasn't
 expecting this to happen either... I'm sorry
 once again...

(Henry cries to himself. Edith
 hugs an injured, shirtless Henry.
 Edith feels the warmth of Henry's
 skin warming her skin. Henry hugs
 her tightly)

EDITH
 (to Henry) Let me go and make that phone
 call.

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother; and looks at his grandmother dial the phone)

 INT. TAYLOR GENERAL HOSPITAL - SURGICAL ROOM

(Fred is on his break from surgical duties. He notices his ringing phone and notices it is Edith's phone. Fred immediately answers the phone call.)

FRED
 (on phone) Hello..

EDITH
 (on phone) Fred. Are you... You're at work aren't you?

FRED
 (on phone) Yes I am. What's up??

EDITH
 (on phone) An incident has occurred...

FRED
 (on phone) Well aren't I shocked??

EDITH
 (on phone) Please Fred. Please no insults please.. You told me to call you if...

FRED
 (on phone) Yes I did tell you... At your friend's place??

EDITH
 (on phone) Yes. Yes please. Please hurry.

(Fred hangs the phone up. Fred alerts his colleagues an emergency has come up; and needs to attend the emergency. His colleagues agree and understand; Fred makes his way to Suzie's residence. He arrives moments later.

 INT. SUZIE'S RESIDENCE - LIVING ROOM

(The door knocks. Henry follows Edith to the front door; Henry is panicking.

Edith opens the front door; and notices Fred with his first aid-kit and surgical utensils. Fred notices yet another shirtless Henry by his grandmother's side; Fred notices Henry's stomach wounds)

FRED
(concerned; to Henry) Are you all good Henry?

HENRY
(groans) I'm alright... It's just... her...

INT. BACKYARD - SUZIE'S RESIDENCE

(Fred notices an unconscious; severely injured Jaffa with a burnt chest. Fred bends down; and recognises Jaffa as his intern)

FRED
(shocked, murmurs) Jaffa...

(Edith and Henry are both shocked to know that Fred knows Jaffa)

EDITH
(shocked; to Fred) You know Jaffa?

FRED
(to Edith) Yeah. She... She's my intern.

(Edith and Henry are shocked to hear Fred's confession)

EDITH
(shocked to Fred) Oh My... Oh My..

FRED
(to Edith) What happened??

EDITH
(to Fred) Well her mother just confessed to me before this; that her daughter has schizophrenia. Jaffa... Jaffa must of had an episode... and she went ballistic-

(Fred is aware of Jaffa's schizophrenia; and nods his head)

FRED
(to Edith) Yes I am... I am aware of Jaffa's schizophrenia. I... I never knew you knew her... I uh... I never knew she was your friend's daughter...

EDITH

(to Fred) Well it was actually the first time I met Jaffa yesterday. Her mother was Beth's school friend as you know-

(Henry groans from his stomach wounds; and holds his palm down on his wounds. Edith notices)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Henry... Your wounds... Just... Go lay down on the lounge... and I'll get those wounds healed...

FRED

(interrupts Edith) Hang on... what happened here??

(Henry looks saddened at his grandmother. Edith nods her head at Henry - allowing him to speak of the situation)

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) She uh... She was going to hurt Grandma with a knife... I didn't like that... So I stepped in... and she cut... (groans) She cut my stomach... as you can see...

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Keep going...

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) And um... And um... I tried to escape. I tried to run away from her... She would keep following me... she kicked my stomach again...

(Fred becomes impatient with Henry's long story-telling into the incident with Jaffa)

FRED

(impatient with Henry) Look Henry... I'm sorry... but get to the point... I'm sorry for what happened to you.. but come on. I've got to get back to work...

HENRY

(cries to Fred) Okay.... OKAY... Jaffa. She... She kept hurting me and pushed me to the fence; and my chest... (looks down at barechest) Turned to fire... (looks at Edith; crying) And I hurt her..

(Fred notices how injured Jaffa

is; and is reminded of how powerful and dangerous Henry can be to people)

FRED

(shocked; to Edith) My God... My God...

(Henry cries after confessing the incident to Fred. Fred looks at Edith; and is lost for words)

FRED

(shocked, to Edith) I'm going to have to take Jaffa to the hospital. She's badly wounded... where's her mother??

EDITH

(to Fred) Knocked out. Jaffa knocked her out...

FRED

(shocked, to Edith) Any injuries?

(MEANWHILE; an injured Suzie wakes up and recounts the events to what happened. She stands up with her hand on her bruised forehead; and instantly worries and thinks of her daughter. Suzie screams for her daughter - Henry, Edith & Fred hear)

SUZIE

(screams) JAFFA. JAFFA. JAFFA-

(Jaffa screams and makes her way outside. Jaffa notices Edith, Fred, and a shirtless Henry. Suzie fears the worse; and runs closer to Edith)

JAFFA

(cries to Edith) My daughter. Where?? Where's Jaffa?

(Jaffa looks down at her severely burnt, injured Jaffa. Jaffa screams in panic; and bends down to her daughter. She cries frantically as she strokes her daughter's cheek. Suzie screams; Henry looks saddened; realising Jaffa's injuries are his doing)

SUZIE

(cries to an unconscious Jaffa) JAFFA... JAFFA.. MY DEAR JAFFA-

(Fred puts his hand on Suzie's shoulder)

FRED

(to Suzie) Look Madamn. I'm... I'm so sorry for your daughter's injury. I'm...

(Suzie takes his daughter's injuries out on everyone)

SUZIE

(annoyed to Fred) WHO ARE YOU?

FRED

(to Suzie) Please Madamn. Please... Please calm down...

SUZIE

(screams at Fred) The name is Suzie... The name is Suzie...

FRED

(concerned; to Suzie) I am sorry Suzie. I am going to take your daughter to the hospital now... I am sorry for your daughter's injuries...

SUZIE

(screams at Fred) WHO DID THIS? WHO DID THIS TO MY BABY GIRL?

EDITH

(concerned; to Suzie) Suzie. Your daughter... Jaffa hurt Henry... Henry's stomach is wounded...

(Suzie looks at Henry's stomach wounds; and screams at Edith)

EDITH

(to Suzie) SO HENRY DID IT. YOU HURT MY DAUGHTER - YOU BLOODY BAD MAN-

(Suzie punches Henry in the jaw. Edith pulls Henry back; and yells at Edith)

EDITH

(frantic to Suzie) SUZIE. NO. STOP. DON'T HURT MY GRANDSON...

(Henry groans and refuses to look at Suzie and Edith; choosing to look away instead. Ashamed; Henry is lost for words)

SUZIE

(screams at Edith) HE HURT MY DAUGHTER. YOU... YOU BLOODY MEN. YOU'RE ALL THE SAME-

(Suzie kicks Henry's stomach; Henry groans in agony and his stomach turns red. Suzie notices Henry's stomach turning red; Henry looks down at his stomach and panics. Edith notices and worries)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Henry... Henry...
Breathe... Breathe-

(Henry groans from his stomach wounds; and looks at his grandmother and breathes. Suzie senses Henry is not normal)

SUZIE

(shouts at Edith) WHAT?? What's wrong with Henry? His stomach is red...

(Henry looks at his deep red-coloured stomach; and fears another fire outburst. Edith, Fred & Suzie watch on)

SUZIE

(shouts at Edith) Your grandson is not normal, is he Edith? Is he??

(Fred notices Henry's red-coloured stomach; and fears another incident is coming)

FRED

(to Henry) Henry. Calm down... Stop it...

HENRY

(panics) I'm trying... Me trying...

(Henry breathes and looks down at his red-coloured stomach and does breathing exercises to reduce the tension he is feeling)

SUZIE

(shouts at Edith) WHAT IS HE? WHAT IS HE?

(Suzie goes ballistic and throws a tennis ball at Henry's stomach. Henry groans in agony; Suzie tries to harm Henry; Fred grabs Suzie's hand and keeps her away from a possibly dangerous Henry. Suzie is restricted by Fred; Henry groans and his stomach engulfs in flames. Suzie notices the powerful, godlike dangerous ability Henry has inside of him.)

Henry notices he is inflamed; and
cries; breathing calmly to
dissipate the flames off himself)

SUZIE

(screams at Henry) SO THAT'S HOW YOU HURT MY
DAUGHTER. MY PRECIOUS DAUGHTER... MY JAFFA-

(Henry cries in agony, and remains
standing; inflamed. Henry looks
away from Edith, Fred & Suzie.
Edith fronts an inflamed Henry)

EDITH

(concerned to Henry) Henry. It's okay...
It's okay... Just breathe. Breathe...

HENRY

(inflamed, cries to Edith) Okay. Okay...

(Henry breathes whilst Edith is
counselling Henry. Minutes later;
the flames dissipate off Henry's
body. Henry cries in reliefment)

HENRY

(cries to Edith) Thank you Grandma. Thank
you...

(An upset Henry hugs Edith)

SUZIE

(screams at Edith) GET HIM OUT OF MY
HOUSE... NOW... GET THAT FREAK OF NATURE OUT
NOW...

(Henry is hurt by Suzie's
comments. Edith stops hugging
Henry; and looks at Suzie)

EDITH

(concerned; to Suzie) Suzie... We will
leave. I'm sorry for what happened to
Jaffa... I would... I would really like to
help Jaffa overcome her schizophrenia. I
would really like to...

(Suzie agrees with Edith; but
strongly dislikes Henry)

SUZIE

(cries to Edith) Fine... But just... I don't
want Henry near my daughter. He's not
allowed near my daughter-

EDITH

(to Suzie) Alright Suzie. Alright...

SUZIE
(cries to Edith) Thank... Thank you...

FRED
(to Edith & Suzie) Righto. I'm taking Jaffa to the hospital to relieve these wounds of hers... Alright... Suzie... Are?

(Suzie responds quickly to Jaffa)

SUZIE
(cries to Fred) Yes.

FRED
(to Suzie) Alright... It's the sedan. The sedan on the right...

(Moments later, Fred helps an injured, unconscious Jaffa up and takes her to the car. Suzie helps sit down her unconscious daughter in the back passenger seat of the sedan; Suzie sits in the front passenger seat of the sedan and wait for Fred)

FRED
(to Edith) Edith... I never told you this... but I've got a ranch property out of town to. I was going to tell you and Henry to move there; instead of here. But you wanted to come here; and I didn't want you to change your mind.

EDITH
(shocked; to Fred) Oh you do?

FRED
(to Edith) Yeah... Henry can come to the ranch and help me with outdoor work if he wants. And he can stay there; now that Suzie doesn't want Henry here.

EDITH
(to Henry) How does that sound Henry?

HENRY
(nods head to Edith) Yes... Okay... I agree...

EDITH
(to Fred) Okay. Thanks Henry...

(Henry worries about himself not seeing his grandmother)

HENRY
(concerned to Edith) But Grandma... Will I?

FRED

(to Henry) Yes... your grandmother will be living there to Henry-

HENRY

(relieved) Thank goodness.

EDITH

(smiles at Henry) I'll be there Henry. Except when I'm not... that's when I'm out shopping, or when I need to see a client.

HENRY

(relieved) Okay. Goodie....

FRED

(to Edith & Henry) Righto... I'm off.

HENRY & EDITH

(to Fred) Bye.

(Minutes later, Fred leaves and drives himself to the hospital with Suzie & Jaffa. MEANWHILE, Henry looks concerned at Edith; Edith notices)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Hey... Henry. It's okay. It's okay...

HENRY

(cries to Edith) Grandma... I didn't. I tried not to let it happen.. I tried to get away.. I... I really tried.

EDITH

(comforts Henry) I know you tried Henry. I know... Now let me help you relieve those wounds. Go lay on the lounge... I've got my first aid kit in my bag-

(Henry obeys his grandmother and nods his head at her)

INT. SUZIE'S RESIDENCE - LIVING ROOM

(Henry makes his way to the living room of Suzie's residence; and lays on the sofa on his back. Edith pulls out a chair from the dining room table; and places it beside the sofa where Henry is laying. Moments later, Edith is applying antiseptic cream to Henry's injured stomach; Henry groans in the process)

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) Sorry Henry... I'm-

(Suddenly, Henry grabs Edith's arm
and groans)

HENRY
(groans to Edith) It's not your fault
Grandma. It's not... it's not your fault
Grandma...

(Henry lets go of Edith's arm)

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) I'm just... I'm sorry
this happened. I wanted a new life for
you... and this... this happens. I'm so
sorry...

HENRY
(groans to Edith) We can... We can find a
better life... I believe... I believe we
can.

(Henry groans)

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) Yes... I know we
can... I will try even harder for us to
start a new life...

(Henry groans)

EDITH
(to Henry) I'm finished now. Sit up-

(Henry sits up. Edith wraps a
bandage around Henry's injured
stomach. She finishes moments
later. Henry looks at his
grandmother)

HENRY
(groans to Edith) Thank you Grandma....
Thank you...

EDITH
(to Henry) Now I'm going to go and pack our
bags so we can move to Fred's new ranch
property...

HENRY
(smiles) Okay.

(Edith stands up; and makes her
way to the reserved room she was
sleeping in at her stay at Suzie's
residence.)

Edith starts packing the bags.
Henry stands up; and makes his way
to Edith; groaning in the process;
watching Edith. Edith notices
Henry looking at her)

EDITH
(to Henry) What's up?

HENRY
(groans to Edith) Nothing... I'm just
shocked... Of all that happened...

EDITH
(to Henry) Don't worry about it Henry. It's
all over now. Thinking about it will drive
you crazy... Let's move forward.

(Henry nods his head in agreement)

HENRY
(groans to Edith) You're right. I'm... I'm
going to pack my bags to...

EDITH
(to Henry) Righto-

(Henry makes his way to the
reserved room he was sleeping in.
He packs his clothes, and zips his
bag up. He finishes and returns to
his grandmother. Edith notices
Henry return to her so suddenly;
Edith is shocked)

EDITH
(shocked; to Henry) You finished, already.
Damn... You're quick.

(Henry laughs. Edith chuckles and
pulls her suitcase out. Henry
offers a hand. 30 minutes later;
Fred returns to Suzie's residence
- Fred has organised his surgeon
coworkers to help relieve Jaffa's
wounds whilst he helps relocate
Edith and Henry. Fred notices
Henry and Edith; with their bags
packed)

FRED
(to Edith & Henry) You ready??

EDITH
(to Fred) Sure am.

HENRY
(agrees with Edith) Yes.. Yes we are ready.

FRED
 (to Henry & Edith) Righto.. Let's get going...

(Henry pulls his grandmother's suitcase to the sedan car; as well as carrying his own backpack on his back. Minutes later' Henry puts his bag and Edith's suitcase in the boot of the sedan. Moments later; Edith and Henry enter the car. 15 minutes later; they arrive at Fred's out-of-town ranch residence)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(They arrive at Fred's farm ranch residence. The farm ranch offers a big dusty brown-exterior shed; with 20 acres of land. Cows and goats take over 10 hectares of the land as paddocks - with animal stock feed, animal feed storage containers, water supply containers and fertiliser overtaking the remaining hectares. MEANWHILE - Edith is amazed of Fred's amazing house residence; and is in awe)

FRED
 (to Edith & Henry) Well we're here... We are here.

(Edith is amazed; and is lost for word. She looks in awe at the livestock cattle and goats walking around the 10 acres of land. Henry is also shocked by Fred's house investment)

FRED
 (to Edith) Edith. You look... you look lost for words...

EDITH
 (shocked to Fred) Oh I am... This ranch. This ranch looks beautiful... I guess that's the perks of being a great surgeon. Good pay; best investments.

FRED
 (to Edith) Well surgical work is a lot of work and very stressful... So I guess. I guess..

EDITH
 (smiles at Fred) Oh you deserve it...
 Thanks.

(A moment of silence)

FRED
 (to Edith) Thanks... Come on... Come on and
 have a look at the property outside of the
 car.

EDITH
 (to Fred) Righto...

(Henry smiles and is in awe of
 Fred's ranch property. Moments
 later; Fred and Edith hop out of
 the car and follow Fred. Edith &
 Henry walk around the whole
 property in awe; whilst Fred
 guides them throughout the
 property)

FRED
 (showcases cattle) So uh. These are my cows.
 Three bulls and one cow. I call them Sandra,
 Smithy, and Smelly.

(Henry chuckles at Fred's choosing
 of the name "Smelly". Fred notices
 Henry's laughter; and instantly
 knows what Henry is laughing at)

FRED
 (to Henry) Yeah I know it's funny that I
 named my bull "Smelly." But he uh... he
 stinks a hell of a lot. A stinky bull that
 is...

(Edith and Henry chuckle. Fred
 smiles)

EDITH
 (chuckles at Fred) It is quite funny.

(Henry and Edith continue
 chuckling. Fred continues to
 smile)

EDITH
 (questions Fred) And do you plan to eat
 these cattle or put them up for sale?

FRED
 (to Edith) No... They live a long rest of
 the life with me... No... I have no interest
 in eating them.

(Henry smiles as he watches the cattle toddle around the paddock. Fred notices Henry's smile)

FRED
(questions Henry) Maybe farm life is for you Henry...

(Edith watches Henry smile as he watches the cattle toddle around the paddock)

HENRY
(smiles at Fred) Yeah... They look... they look so cool...

FRED
(jokes with Henry) Just don't... Don't burn my cattle please.

(Henry doesn't get the joke and is offended)

HENRY
(offended to Fred) I won't.

FRED
(to Henry) Just joking Henry. Just joking. Just take a joke...

(Henry remains offended. Edith confronts Fred)

EDITH
(annoyed to Fred) Please Fred. Respect please... Please show respect...

FRED
(to Edith) Righto... Righto...

(Henry lets go of the insult. Edith continues guiding Fred along the farmland he owns. Fred showcases his goats to Henry & Edith)

FRED
(showcases goats) And these are my goats. Three bucks, three does.

HENRY
(smiles at goats) Wow...

(Edith can see how pleasant surprised her grandson is; whilst looking at the farmland goats Fred owns)

FRED

(chuckles to Edith) Well Henry's eyes are peeled at those goats..

(Henry hears Fred's comment, and looks at Edith and smiles)

EDITH

(to Fred) Maybe Henry is going to have to feed them now and again..

HENRY

(smiles) I'd like to do that.

FRED

(to Edith) Righto... That is... That is a possibility...

(Henry smiles and becomes excited of feeding the livestock animals so often. Fred points his finger at the opposite side of the livestock - where the animal stock feed, animal feed storage containers, water supply containers and fertiliser is located)

FRED

(to Edith & Henry) And that's just garden fertiliser, animal feed, water supply containers etc. All that stuff. The boring stuff... But anyways. Come inside. I'll show you each of your rooms...

EDITH

(to Fred) Righto...

(Henry smiles as he follows Edith and Fred inside the barn house)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - EDITH'S RESERVED ROOM

(Fred showcases Edith her room of the barnhouse. Inside her reserved room - is a wooden-framed queen bed; fitted with quilts and sheets - with wooden ceilings and floorings; with two wooden-enclosed wardrobes; and a wooden bedside table placed next to her reserved bed. Edith smiles and is thankful of Fred)

FRED
 (showcases Edith's reserved room) So there we have it Edith...

EDITH
 (smiles at Fred) Oh thank... Thank you so much... I truly thank you....

FRED
 (smiles at Edith) It's all I could do for a friend of mine-

EDITH
 (smiles) Oh... And I truly appreciate it... thank you...

(Henry smiles at Edith and Fred; and is very pleased of Fred's helpful accomodation arrangements for his grandmother. Fred turns his attention to Henry)

FRED
 (to Henry) Righto Henry... Your room now...

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S RESERVED ROOM

(Henry smiles as he looks at Fred; and follows him to his reserved room. Edith follows Fred. They arrive in Henry's reserved room - it features wooden ceilings & wooden floorings once again, with a wooden bed made of hay; with a wooden closet for clothing. Henry is thankful)

HENRY
 (thankful to Fred) Thank you Fred. Thank you so much.

FRED
 (to Edith) No worries. No worries at all...

(Henry smiles and is very thankful. Edith smiles at Fred)

EDITH
 (smiles) Thank you Fred... For everything... And I mean everything...

FRED
 (to Edith) No... No worries at all. I'd love to help...

(A moment of silence)

Made in Highland

FRED

(to Edith) Well settle in you two... I'm going to go fertilise the garden...

(Fred makes his way outside to fertilise the garden. Henry looks at Edith and smiles)

EDITH

(smiles to Henry) Fred has done a lot for us... I just hope. I just hope now I can give you a better life...

HENRY

(smiles at Edith) Grandma... I love it already. I love it already...

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly with love. Edith smiles.)

EDITH

(smiles at Henry) Good... Good... You deserve a good life...

(A moment of silence. Henry stops hugging his grandmother minutes later)

EDITH

(to Henry) Well uh... I might unpack. And you better to.

HENRY

(to Edith) Okay. And yeah... I better unpack to. I will get our bags.

EDITH

(smiles at Henry) Righto... Thanks Henry-

(Henry smiles at Edith - and fetches the bags from the boot of the sedan. He holds his backpack by his back; and wheels Edith's suitcase into the barnhouse. Henry hands the suitcase to Edith)

EDITH

(smiles) Thank you Henry...

HENRY

(to Edith) No worries Grandma. No worries...

(Henry hugs his grandmother once again)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) You're a good grandson Henry. Your mother would be so happy with you...

(Henry smiles as he continues to hug his grandmother once again, Moments later; Henry stops hugging his grandmother)

EDITH
(to Henry) Righto... Time for me to unpack..

(Henry nods his head at his grandmother; allowing her to unpack her bags. Henry begins unpacking his bags. A moment later, Edith's phone rings in her room whilst she unpacks)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - EDITH'S
RESERVED ROOM

(Edith notices her ringing phone; and notices it is an unknown phone call. She picks her phone up and answers it)

EDITH
(on phone) Hello...

(It is Jaffa on the phone. Jaffa is in recovery at home; and has recalled her schizophrenic episode. Jaffa has suffered damaged body tissue on her chest; having requiring skin grafting surgery after Henry had severely burnt her. She is also on heavy painkillers. Jaffa has recalled the time where Henry had severely burnt her; and blames herself for the incident. Jaffa is in deep regret and sorrow; of the memory of nearly stabbing Edith with a knife. Jaffa wishes to apologise to Edith via the phone)

JAFFA
(cries on phone) Edith...

(Edith is shocked to hear it is Jaffa)

EDITH
(on phone) Jaffa... Jaffa...

JAFFA
(cries on phone) I'm sorry...
(MORE)

JAFFA (CONT'D)

I'm sorry for what I did... Me sorry. I'm sorry... I'm-

(Edith sympathises with Jaffa over the phone about the incident. Jaffa coughs on the phone from her severe burn wounds. Edith begins counselling Jaffa on the phone)

EDITH

(on phone) Jaffa. Jaffa... sweetie. It's okay. It was just a schizophrenic episode...

JAFFA

(cries on phone) I didn't mean it Edith. I didn't-

(Jaffa coughs on the phone)

EDITH

(on phone) Jaffa. It's okay... Your mother told me about your schizophrenia... It's okay... It was an accident... And I want you to know... I can help you... I'm a counsellor... I can help you...

JAFFA

(on phone) No... Don't... I'm not safe... I'm dangerous... I ain't...

EDITH

(on phone) Jaffa. No... No you're not. You are not dangerous... don't ever think that... We've all got our problems; and I like fixing everyone's problems. Including yours...

(Jaffa cries on the phone. She continues coughing)

EDITH

(on phone) Is your mother there darling?

JAFFA

(cries on phone) Yes... But Edith... I'm sorry about the knife... I'm sorry. I'm sorry for trying to hurt you with the knife... I'm sorry. I didn't mean it...

EDITH

(on phone) It's okay Jaffa. It's okay... I know you didn't mean it.... Could I talk to your mother please?

JAFFA

(cries on phone) Yes...

(Jaffa hands the phone to her mother on the life. Suzie is ashamed of her behaviour with Henry & Edith; after the incident. Suzie speaks)

SUZIE
(cries on phone) Hello...

EDITH
(on phone) Hey Suzie... Listen...

(Suzie interrupts Edith on the phone)

SUZIE
(cries on phone) Edith. I'm sorry... I'm sorry... I'm sorry for the way I treated you and Henry... I just...

EDITH
(on phone) It's okay Suzie... I understand. You were shocked and hurt by what happened. It's okay...

SUZIE
(cries on phone) I feel so bad... I'm sorry. I shouldn't have reacted like that-

(Jaffa cries in bed with her hands on her head. Suzie comforts Jaffa)

EDITH
(on phone) It's okay... It's okay... I was thinking... if I could do some counselling sessions with Jaffa. I'd love to help...

SUZIE
(relieved on phone) Yeah sure... Sure... Sure of course.... Yes please..

(Suzie notices her daughter Jaffa wants the phone. Suzie hands the phone to her daughter Jaffa)

JAFFA
(cries on phone) Edith... I'm sorry... I didn't mean it...

EDITH
(on phone) Jaffa. It's okay... We all make mistakes... and we learn from them. And we can rectify those mistakes to....

JAFFA
(cries on phone) How... How's Henry? I'm sorry I hurt him...

EDITH

(on phone) He's distraught. He's very shocked by what happened...

JAFFA

(cries on phone) Tell him it wasn't his fault. I... It was mine...

EDITH

(on phone) No Jaffa... It wasn't... Don't ever think it was your fault... We will fight this schizophrenia together sweetie. We will..

(Jaffa coughs whilst on the phone)

JAFFA

(cries on phone) Okay...

EDITH

(on phone) How's 2pm every Tuesday and Thursday?

JAFFA

(cries on phone) Good... Okay...

EDITH

(on phone) Righto...

JAFFA

(cries on phone) Grandma... I'd like... I'd like to formally apologise in person... To you... and Henry...

(Edith agrees with Jaffa's wishes)

EDITH

(on phone) Righto. Righto... Sure...

JAFFA

(cries on phone) When would be a good time?

EDITH

(on phone) Well it is Tuesday today... We could do our counselling session today... if it's okay with you??

JAFFA

(agrees with Edith) Okay then... Okay...

EDITH

(on phone) See you then... And don't ever think it's your fault... it's not. We will solve this issue together..

(Jaffa cries at Edith's kind words over the phone)

EDITH & FRED

(on phone) It's okay Jaffa. It's all good... It's all good... I'll see you then. Bye sweetie..

JAFFA
(cries over phone) Bye...

(Jaffa ends the phone call.)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING
ROOM TABLE

(MEANWHILE, Edith prepares for Jaffa's arrival. Hours later - a purple hatchback car arrives at the property. Henry is still in his room unpacking. Fred notices two women exit the car. Fred is unsure of who it is; and makes his way closer to the purple hatchback. Fred identifies it is Jaffa - his intern)

FRED
(shocked to Jaffa) What?? What??

SUZIE
(to Fred) Hello there Fred. I believe it was.

FRED
(to Suzie) Yes it is...

FRED
(to Suzie) Why? How did you get here?

SUZIE
(to Fred) Edith said she's going to offer a counselling session to Jaffa.

FRED
(to Suzie) Oh.. okay sure. She's in the barn.

SUZIE
(to Fred) Okay thanks-

(Suzie and Jaffa walk to the barn. Jaffa groans in pain from her burn wounds; and makes her way inside the barn. Edith opens the barn door - and notices Jaffa and Edith. Jaffa cries as soon as she sees Edith in person)

JAFFA
(cries) I'm sorry... I'm sorry... I'm sorry-

(Jaffa hugs Edith. Edith hugs Jaffa tightly; Jaffa cries from her wounds)

EDITH
(comforts Jaffa) It's okay.

(Edith stops hugging Jaffa. Jaffa cries at Edith. HENRY MEANWHILE - walks out his reserved room; and notices Jaffa and Suzie; and is stunned. Suzie gulps as she notices a shirtless Henry - the young man she had met just yesterday; with the power of deadly fire and heat. Edith notices Suzie is looking at Henry; Henry is freaking out; Edith turns her attention to Henry)

EDITH
(to Henry) Henry... Henry... It's okay.
Jaffa is here for her counselling session...

(Henry notices Jaffa is looking at him; Henry looks at Jaffa and quickly looks away - ashamed of what he did to her. An awkward silence...)

EDITH
(to Henry) Henry. Look at me... Look at me... It's okay...

(Henry gulps in fear and looks at his grandmother; refusing to look at Suzie and Jaffa)

HENRY
(petrified) Grandma... Me... I will just be outside...

EDITH
(concerned to Henry) Henry. It's okay...
It's okay...

(Henry walks around Jaffa & Suzie; and exits the barn. Henry is deep in shock; and makes his way to look at the cattle toddle around the paddock. Edith looks at Jaffa & Suzie)

EDITH
(comforts Jaffa) It's okay Jaffa. It's okay.
Henry is shocked by all what has happened to... It's okay...

JAFFA
(cries to Edith) I would like to apologise to him... I'm sorry. I'm sorry...

EDITH

(comforts Jaffa) He will. I'll encourage him to talk to you...

JAFFA

(cries to Edith) Thank you...

EDITH

(to Jaffa) Now we shall have silence you and I Jaffa. (to Suzie) Um Suzie. I shall be about an hour. Do you have anything you can do for an hour... like grocery shopping or... any appointments or...?

SUZIE

(to Edith) I can uh... I can do some bargain clothes shopping for Jaffa and I... sure...

EDITH

(to Edith) Just an hour I need. Just an hour...

SUZIE

(to Edith) No take all the time you need. I'll be at the shops... (to Jaffa) Have fun Jaffa. Love you.

JAFFA

(cries to Suzie) Love you to Mumma.

(Suzie kisses her daughter on the forehead; and leaves for the shops in her car. Minutes later; Edith begins her counselling session with Jaffa, on the green sofa in the dining room. Jaffa cries; still upset over the incident and her schizophrenia)

EDITH

(comforts Jaffa) It's okay Jaffa. It's all good... It's all good... Everything is okay...

JAFFA

(cries) I didn't mean this to happen... I didn't mean this to happen... I didn't..

EDITH

(comforts Jaffa) I know you didn't... I know you didn't...

(Edith hugs Jaffa)

JAFFA

(cries) I'm so sorry Edith... Me so sorry...

(Edith stops hugging Jaffa)

EDITH
(comforts Jaffa) It's okay Jaffa. It's all good...

(Jaffa cries and tries to be strong)

EDITH
(comforts Jaffa) It's okay. Let's fight this together. Look at me... Look at me.... Now breathe...

(Jaffa tries to stop crying; and is very upset)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(MEANWHILE, Henry is still outside looking at the cattle toddle around the paddock; and is shocked to see Jaffa with his grandmother - and is reminded of the incident where he had badly burnt her. Fred fronts Henry after putting the fertiliser down after fertilising the garden)

FRED
(to Henry) Are you all good Henry??

(Henry is not okay - with the thought of the young woman he had badly injured is at the barn; with his grandmother. Henry tries to hide his panicking)

HENRY
(worries; to Fred) I'm... I'm okay.

(Fred doesn't believe Henry)

FRED
(to Henry) Bull... I know something is up young man... what is it?

HENRY
(annoyed to Fred) Nothing... It's nothing really...

(Fred instantly knows it is about Jaffa)

FRED
(questions Henry) I know who... Jaffa... It's Jaffa isn't it?

(Henry nods his head and panics)

HENRY

(panics to Fred) Grandma.... Grandma is trying to help her... But what if she flips again... or goes crazy. Grandma... I must... I must protect her..

FRED

(to Henry) You can't interrupt a counselling session Henry. It's rude...

HENRY

(panics to Fred) But Grandma... Grandma...

(Henry puts his hands on the steel fence; and puts his head down.
Fred pats Henry on the back)

FRED

(to Henry) Look Henry... She'll be fine... Have faith...

(Henry gulps in fear, and still has his head remaining down. Sandra the cow, makes her way towards Henry at the steel fence. Sandra licks Henry's hands. Henry looks back up, and notices it is a cow licking his hands. Henry begins to like the cow)

HENRY

(to Sandra) Hello there... Hello...

(Henry pats Sandra the cow. Sandra the cow, likes Henry and continues licking Henry's hands. Henry chuckles. Fred looks)

FRED

(to Henry) I think she likes you.

HENRY

(to Sandra) What??? What's her name again?

FRED

(to Henry) Sandra. Sandra the Cow.

HENRY

(smiles; to Sandra) Hello there Sandra. You pretty cow...

(Henry chuckles. Sandra continues licking Henry's hands out of affection for Henry)

HENRY

(to Sandra) You are such a good cow... You are such a good cow.. aren't you??

(Sandra continues licking Henry's hands. Henry smiles at Sandra; and begins to really like her)

HENRY

(to Sandra) You are my favourite cow ever Sandra. You are... You so are...

(Sandra once again continues to lick Henry's hands. Moments later, Henry smiles and asks Fred a question. Sandra continues licking Henry's hands)

HENRY

(to Fred) Ah... Fred... Fred. Could I ask you a question please?? Please??

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Yeah... sure...

(Henry breathes and asks the question)

HENRY

(to Fred) Could I uh... Could I uh... Could I start calling you Dad?

(Fred is shocked by the question)

FRED

(shocked; to Henry) Woah... Henry... I am not your father... Vince is...

HENRY

(to Fred) I know you're not... But I think of you as mine... So... uh... Ah... Nevermind... I just...

FRED

(shocked; to Henry) Woah Henry... Hang on... I'm just shocked by the question...

HENRY

(to Fred) I just.... I just wish you were... that's all.... But nevermind. Nevermind...

(Fred is shocked by Henry's strange question out of the blue)

FRED

(shocked; to Henry) Let me have a think about it...

HENRY
(to Fred) Okay.

(Henry looks at Sandra; and smiles. Sandra continues licking Henry's hands)

HENRY
(to Sandra) You know what Sandra. Not only are you the best cow... But you are the only friend I ever had...

(Henry smiles at Sandra the cow. Sandra continues licking Henry's hands. Fred watches and smiles)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING ROOM

(MEANWHILE - Edith is just about finished her counselling session with Jaffa. Jaffa has her eyes closed during the counselling session)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) It's okay Jaffa. It's all good... Just breathe....

(Jaffa listens to Edith)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Now what is your most favourite thing to do in the world; apart from studying to be a doctor... What is that?

JAFFA
(to Edith) I love knitting... I like to knit clothes and stuff...

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Okay cool. And what clothes and accessories have you knit before?

JAFFA
(to Edith) Like I... I have knit... I have knit a scarf for myself and my mum a sweater...

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Oh. That would be nice to see... You might have to knit me something one day...

JAFFA
(to Edith) I would love to do that...

(Jaffa smiles)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Good... Now focus on casting on. And knitting those stitches together-

(Jaffa focuses her thinking on stitching knit stitches together; making a scarf)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Good Jaffa. You're doing well. Now focus on breathing for me...

(Jaffa breathes once again)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Focus all your attention on knitting a scarf for me. What colour would you make for me?

(Jaffa begins to have another schizophrenic episode. She breathes and starts fidgeting; Edith senses something is wrong)

EDITH
(concerned; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Are you okay? It's okay...

(Jaffa starts fidgeting and closes his fists repeatedly)

EDITH
(concerned; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Jaffa... It's okay.

JAFFA
(panics; to Edith) Edith. It's happening again. It's happening. It's happening... It's happening...

EDITH
(comforts Jaffa) Jaffa. It's okay... It's okay. I'm here. I'm all here for you. It's okay...

JAFFA
(panics; to Edith) I'm scared. I'm scared-

(Jaffa punches her thighs repeatedly with her fists. Jaffa begins to cry frantically)

JAFFA

(panics; to Edith) Help me... Help me...

(Jaffa opens her eyes and cries.
Edith holds Jaffa's hands
together)

EDITH

(comforts Jaffa) Jaffa. Listen to me...
Listen to me... Look at me... Look at me...

(Jaffa begins to envision Edith as
a witch with fire. Terrified of
witches; Jaffa begins to freak
out)

JAFFA

(screams; to Edith) Witch.... Witch. I'm
scared I'm scared..

(Jaffa screams. Edith continues
comforting Jaffa)

EDITH

(comforts Jaffa) Jaffa. It's not real...
it's not real. Transform your thinking.
Imagine myself as your favourite animal.
What's your favourite animal?

JAFFA

(cries; to Edith) My doggie. Mike the
Maltese..

EDITH

(comforts Jaffa) Think of me as your dog.
Visualise me as your dog Miko.... It's okay.
Imagine me as Mike playing fetch with a
tennis ball...

(Jaffa starts to visualise Edith
as her dog Miko, in her mind.
Jaffa cries in the process; as she
tries to imagine Edith as Miko.
This proves successful; and
Jaffa's schizophrenic episode
ends. Jaffa cries in relief as her
schizophrenic episode ends; with
the help of Edith's counselling)

EDITH

(smiles; to Jaffa) You did it Jaffa. You did
it!!! You did well. You did awesome... Good
on ya!!

(Jaffa opens her eyes, and is
relieved. Jaffa cries in relief)

JAFFA

(cries to Edith) Thank you Edith... Thank you so much... Thank you...

(Edith hugs Jaffa tightly)

EDITH

(smiles; to Jaffa) I'm proud of you. I'm very proud of you.... Good on you. Your mother would be to...

JAFFA

(cries to Edith) You are my superhero-

(Jaffa cries in Edith's arms)

EDITH

(smiles; to Jaffa) You did really well. I'm so proud of you... I'm very proud of you...

(Edith stops hugging Jaffa minutes later)

EDITH

(smiles; to Jaffa) Good on you Jaffa. Well Done...

JAFFA

(cries to Edith) Thank you Edith. Thank you-

(MEANWHILE - Suzie arrives at Fred's Ranch Residence in her purple hatchback. She hops out of the car and makes her way toward the barn. She knocks on the bar door; Edith answers the door)

EDITH

(smiles; to Suzie) Hey Suzie... Jaffa did really well...

(Jaffa looks at Suzie, her mother)

JAFFA

(to Suzie) Mumma. Edith... She's a superhero. She saved me...

SUZIE

(relieved; to Edith) Oh thank you Edith. Thank you...

JAFFA

(to Suzie) It helps. She... Edith kills the schizophrenia... She really does...

SUZIE

(relieved; to Edith) Thank you Edith. (smiles; to Jaffa) And Jaffa. I'm so proud. We will cure this together-

(Jaffa stands up and hugs her mother)

SUZIE

(to Jaffa) Well done my Darling... Well Done.... I've got shopping in the car. Clothes shopping...

JAFFA

(excited; to Suzie) What?? Really??

SUZIE

(to Jaffa) Yes I do my Darling... Wait outside for me. I'd like to talk to Edith for a sec....

JAFFA

(to Suzie) Okay Mumma-

(Jaffa walks outside the barn)

INT. FRED'S FARM RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(She notices a shirtless Henry watching the cattle toddle around the paddock; and decides to approach him; in fear of his hatred towards her. Sandra the Cow, is still licking Henry's hands; Henry smiles and chuckles at Sandra. Jaffa stands next to Henry and begins talking)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Ah... Henry. Henry...

(Henry looks beside him; and notices Jaffa. Henry sighs in panic; and steps backwards; taking his hand away from Sandra's mouth)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Henry.. Please don't leave. I won't hurt you... I just came to apologise for what I did to you... (looks at Henry's stomach wounds) Your stomach. I'm sorry...

(Henry stays still, and stops moving backwards. Henry is lost for words; in panic; and looks at the sky; too scared to look at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) I'm sorry. I've... I've got schizophrenia. Your grandma is trying to help me... I'm... I'm sorry...

Made in Highland

HENRY

(upset; to Jaffa) You nearly killed my Grandma...

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) I know. I know... And I will always hate myself for that... I always will. It's just my schizophrenia is so bad; I'm scared of it so bad... I wish... I wish I was normal...

(Henry relates to Jaffa - as he sympathises with Jaffa on his hatred of his abilities; and how he wishes he was normal)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) I'm sorry.

HENRY

(cries to Jaffa) I'm sorry... for hurting you... I'm sorry...

(Jaffa thinks of Henry's powerful fire abilities - the exact time where Henry bolted fire from his chest to hers)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) Henry... it wasn't your fault. It was mine. Like that saying goes; I started the fire... It's my fault...

HENRY

(cries to Jaffa) I tried so hard to get away from you... Because I didn't want it to happen. But you kept... you kept following me. I couldn't stop it... I hate it... I hate my ability so much...

(Jaffa sympathises with Henry)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) I guess we've got one thing in common-

HENRY

(cries to Jaffa) Agreed...

(A moment of silence)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) You don't have to answer, I'm just curious... how long have you had that ability of yours?

(Henry cries as he answers)

HENRY

(cries to Jaffa) Since I was born... It... It's just gotten worse and worse as I got older...

JAFFA

(saddened; questions Henry) You mean it's gotten stronger??

HENRY

(cries to Jaffa) Yes... It has... I don't like it...

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) I've had my schizophrenia for years too. It's just gotten worse now...

(Henry relates to Jaffa)

HENRY

(cries to Jaffa) Again, I'm... I'm sorry for what happened...

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) I'm sorry for what happened. Your grandmother really is a saviour. She really distracts you from thinking about it. I know she's a mind doctor... but maybe she's got psychic abilities. You know... maybe she does?

(Henry and Jaffa chuckle with each other)

HENRY

(chuckles; to Jaffa) Yeah. Maybe my Grandma does. She's my superhero...

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Henry) Same. She's mine to. Are we?? Could we be best friends?

(Henry is surprised by the question; as this is the only friend he's had in his life)

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) Um... sure. Sure.

(Jaffa holds out her hand. Henry shakes Jaffa's hand. They smile at each other)

JAFFA

(to Henry) We should ah... really hang out one day. Get to really know each other a bit more.

(Henry smiles)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) I'd like that. Okay... sure...

(Suzie and Edith step outside; and both notice Henry and Jaffa talking)

SUZIE
(shocked; to Edith) They're talking...

EDITH
(to Suzie) They are talking... I see-

(Jaffa turns her head around; and notices her mother waiting for her)

JAFFA
(to Henry) I've got to head home. Maybe this Thursday. We shall see each other then. See ya Henry...

HENRY
(smiles at Jaffa) See you then...

(Henry smiles as he watches Jaffa head home with her mother. Henry begins to become attracted to Jaffa in a romantic way; and smiles)

EDITH
(to Jaffa) See you Thursday, Jaffa. And well done... We shall cure this schizophrenia together...

JAFFA
(to Edith) See you Edith. Thanks... Thanks for everything...

(Jaffa hugs Edith. Jaffa lets go of Edith minutes later)

JAFFA
(to Edith) Bye Edith. Bye...

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) Bye. (to Suzie) Bye Suzie-

(Minutes later, the purple hatchback leaves. Edith looks at Henry; and makes her way towards him)

EDITH
(to Henry) Well someone has feelings am I thinking...

(Henry chuckles and shakes his head)

EDITH
(to Henry) Oh I think you do...

(Edith chuckles. Henry chuckles with Edith)

EDITH
(smiles; to Henry) See. I know you do....

(Henry chuckles and confesses his feelings towards Jaffa - nodding his head)

EDITH
(excited; to Henry) Oh you Do. Awesome Henry. I'm so happy for you...

(Henry chuckles at his grandmother; and hugs her tightly)

HENRY
(smiles at Edith) I do... I like her Grandma... I like her...

(Edith is happy to finally found her grandson - finding love with a girl for the first time)

EDITH
(excited; to Henry) I'm so happy. I'm so happy for you Henry.

HENRY
(excited; to Edith) Thank you Grandma...

(Henry continues to smile)

INT. FRED'S FARM RESIDENCE - HENRY'S
RESERVED ROOM

(It is now 10pm - Edith and Fred are sleeping in their respected rooms. Henry looks at the ceiling, and smiles as he falls in love with Jaffa. Henry smiles and tosses to the side of the haybed, still thinking about her. Henry falls asleep minutes later. IT IS THE NEXT THURSDAY - Henry wakes up. He rises and shine, stretches his arms and legs, and hops out of the haybed.)

INT. FRED'S FARM RESIDENCE - DINING ROOM

(Henry makes his way to the dining room where Edith is cooking breakfast for herself, Henry and Fred. Edith and Fred notice Henry; Henry's stomach wounds from the knife attack by Jaffa; has officially healed)

EDITH
(to Henry) Hello Mister. How was your sleep?

HENRY
(smiles; to Edith) Alright...

EDITH
(chuckles; to Henry) Been dreaming about Jaffa?

(Henry chuckles with his grandmother)

FRED
(looks at Henry) So the young man has finally fell in love.

(Henry nods his head and chuckles. Edith chuckles)

EDITH
(smiles; to Fred) Yes he has. Beth would be so happy for him...

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly; not wanting to let go. Edith feels the warmth of Henry's skin touching hers)

EDITH
(hugging Henry) When are you going to tell her Henry?

HENRY
(Hugging Edith) I'm a bit scared to...

EDITH
(hugging Henry) Nah... Don't be scared. Tell her your feelings... But before I want you both together... I need to help her control her schizophrenia more; so there are no more accidents between you two.

HENRY
(hugging Edith) Agreed Grandma... Agreed.

(Edith smiles as she continues hugging Henry. Edith stops hugging Henry moments later. Henry smiles at Edith)

EDITH
(smiles; to Henry) Come on... Have a big protein-filled omelette. Your favourite...

(Henry licks his tongue in delight)

HENRY
(to Edith) Yummy.

(Henry sits down beside his grandmother at the dining room table. He begins eating his omelette)

FRED
(to Henry) Righto Henry. I'm a... I'm gonna need your help with lifting some wood to the shed...

HENRY
(to Fred) Okay...

(Edith serves Henry his breakfast dish of a protein-filled omelette. Henry looks at his grandmother and smiles)

HENRY
(smiles; to Edith) Thank you Grandma...

(Edith smiles. Edith then serves Fred his dish of a protein-filled omelette, and herself a bowl of oats. Edith smiles at Fred)

FRED
(to Edith) Thanks Edith..

EDITH
(to Fred) No worries...

(Edith now sits down at the table, beside Henry. The three begin eating their meals. Edith checks the time on her phone; Henry looks at Edith and is worried that she is looking at the time)

HENRY
(concerned; to Edith) Grandma.. What? What's wrong??

EDITH
(to Henry) Oh nothing Henry. Jaffa's coming today at 2pm for another counselling session...

(Henry is pleased to hear that Jaffa is coming down for another counselling session - as he plans to confess to Jaffa his feelings towards her)

HENRY

(questions Edith) So Grandma... Do you think... Do you think I should tell Jaffa my feelings towards her ... or no??

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Yeah. Of course... go and tell her. She may confess her feelings towards you...

(Henry smiles at Edith. 15 minutes later; the three finish their meals. Henry burps loud; Edith chuckles)

EDITH

(chuckles; to Henry) Excuse you Mister. Damn... every time you have an omelette - you burp.

FRED

(chuckles; to Edith) It must have been that good.

(Henry chuckles to himself; and burps again)

HENRY

(chuckles) Excuse me-

(Henry puts his head on the dining room table and laughs. Edith lightly smacks Henry's back, and laughs)

EDITH

(laughs; to Henry) You pig...

(Henry laughs with his head still down on the table)

FRED

(to Henry) Grub... Now that's no way to impress a lady..

(Henry laughs to himself on the table. Henry stands up and puts his dirty dishes in the sink; and rinses them)

EDITH

(to Fred) But anyway. I'm glad Henry's finally found love...

(Henry smiles as he listens to his grandmother's words. He finishes rinsing the dishes minutes later; and looks at his grandmother Edith)

FRED

(to Henry) Righto Henry... Get changed into the work clothes I've placed on the sofa there. Your grandmother picked them up this morning from the shops.

HENRY

(to Fred) Okay...

(Henry picks up the work clothes on the sofa; and heads to his room to get changed. Minutes later, he returns to the dining room table - wearing a black work shirt, with gold baggage pants and black heavy-duty boots. Edith notices Henry all dressed up; ready for a heavy-work load)

FRED

(to Henry) Righto... You're ready... Let's get going...

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(Henry follows Fred outside to the pile of wood; and starts carrying each heavy load to the shed. 10 minutes later; he finishes moving the heavy load to the shed. Hours later - it is 2pm - Jaffa arrives with her mother in the purple hatchback. Henry notices Jaffa exiting the car; Jaffa and Henry exchange smiles with each other. Fred instructs Henry how to feed the cattle; Jaffa watches as Henry feeds the cattle. Jaffa approaches the barn door, and notices Edith opening the front door)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Edith) Edith... Hey...

EDITH

(smiles; to Jaffa) Hello there Jaffa...

(Edith hugs Jaffa)

EDITH

(smiles; to Jaffa) Righto. Come inside...

Made in Highland

(Edith closes the door behind Jaffa, Suzie and herself. Jaffa sits on the five-seater green sofa)

SUZIE

(to Edith) So how are you this morning Edith?

EDITH

(to Suzie) I'm all good. What about you Suzie?

SUZIE

(smiles; to Edith) I'm fine. I'm all good. I'm all good when I see my Jaffa happy...

EDITH

(to Jaffa) And today shall be another successful counselling session... We will overcome this schizophrenia once and for all. Won't we?

(Edith hi-fives Jaffa's hand. Jaffa smiles)

SUZIE

(to Edith) Righto... I'll head to the shops and do some grocery shopping once again. I'll be back in about an hour...

EDITH

(to Suzie) Righteo. Have fun Suzie-

SUZIE

(to Edith) Oh I will. I love that caffeine-hit every now and again... (to Jaffa) See you my baby girl...

(Suzie kisses Jaffa on the forehead. Jaffa smiles. Suzie approaches the door)

SUZIE

(to Edith & Jaffa) Bye...

JAFFA & EDITH

(to Suzie) Bye.

(Jaffa leaves. Jaffa then looks at Edith)

EDITH

(smiles; to Jaffa) Let's beat this thing once and for all-

JAFFA

(smiles; to Edith) Yes... Let's do it...

(Edith smiles at Jaffa)

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) Alright... Let's breathe.
One breath at a time...

(Jaffa breathes, listening to her
counsellor and best friend Edith)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Now close your eyes
sweetie. Close your eyes...

(Jaffa closes her eyes and
breathes once again)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Good... Now imagine a
time you had together with your mum.
Visualise that memory in your mind...

(Jaffa breathes and recounts the
memory herself and her mother went
clothes shopping. Jaffa smiles in
the process)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Yes... Now hold that
memory in mind.

(Jaffa holds the memory in mind)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Keep breathing for
me... Keep breathing for me...

(Jaffa keeps breathing)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) You're doing very
well...

(Jaffa begins to have another
episode; and fears the worse)

JAFFA
(scared; to Edith) It's coming back... It's
coming back...

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Jaffa..

(Edith holds Jaffa's hands)

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Transform your
imagination. What? What's your favourite
fantasy animal?

JAFFA
(scared; to Edith) A unicorn...

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Think of me as a unicorn. Transform that imagination of yours. What unicorn would I be?

JAFFA
(breathes; to Edith) A red unicorn. Red is my favourite colour...

(Jaffa starts visualising Edith as a red unicorn - her favourite colour of her favourite fantasy animal. Jaffa's imagined fixation of Edith as a witch; disappears and changes into a red unicorn - prompting another successful counselling session. Jaffa becomes excited)

JAFFA
(excited; to Edith) It's working... It's actually working... My goodness. My goodness...

EDITH
(counselling Jaffa) Now focus on breathing for me again Jaffa. Just focus on every breath...

(Jaffa takes one breath at a time; and focuses on each breath she takes. Edith smiles of another yet successful counselling session)

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) Now open your eyes for me...

(Jaffa opens her eyes. Her schizophrenia successfully to dies off through CBT Therapy; Jaffa is fully healed; and no longer suffers from schizophrenia)

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) Well Done Jaffa. You did it...

(Jaffa becomes elated, and smiles)

JAFFA
(elated; to Edith) No you did it Edith. You did it. My superheroine did it. Super woman you are...

(Edith smiles)

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) Oh well thank you Jaffa.

JAFFA
(elated; to Edith) No thank you.

(Edith smiles)

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) No we both did it.

JAFFA
(smiles; to Edith) We did it with your
psychic abilities...

(Edith chuckles at Jaffa's
comments)

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) No... with mind over
matter... That's it... That's what I tell
Henry all the time...

JAFFA
(questions Edith) How is Henry??

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) He's good... As a matter
of fact... he wants to tell you something
when you're free...

JAFFA
(smiles; to Edith) Oh does he now??

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) Yes he does. Go talk to
him... He's outside... Your mother will be
here soon to pick you up...

JAFFA
(to Edith) Okay... Okay I shall...

(Jaffa smiles and stands up; Edith
stands up shortly after. Jaffa
then hugs Edith)

JAFFA
(hugging Edith) Thank you Edith.... Truly...

EDITH
(hugging Jaffa) No worries Jaffa. I love
helping people...

JAFFA
(hugging Edith) Thank you.

(Edith smiles as Jaffa leaves the
door, and fronts Henry at the
cattle paddock)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(Jaffa stands beside Henry at the
 cattle paddock; Henry is stunned)

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Henry) Hey Henry... Well
 you're... Well you're working hard...

(Henry smiles at Jaffa)

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Henry) Your grandma... Said...
 She said you wanted to tell me something...

(Henry notices Edith from a far-
 distance and smiles. Edith nods
 her head at a far-distance -
 signifying Henry to confess his
 feelings for Jaffa)

HENRY
 (smiles; to Jaffa) I uh... I... I... I
 really like you...

(Jaffa is surprised by Henry's
 confession. Edith returns inside
 the barn)

JAFFA
 (surprised; to Henry) Oh really. I like you
 to...

HENRY
 (smiles; to Jaffa) I uh... I like you... in
 a more... in a more... romantic way...

(Jaffa is surprised and smiles)

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Henry) Oh... like boyfriend kind
 of way...

(Henry smiles and nods his head.
 Henry chuckles out of shyness,
 Jaffa's affections grow towards
 Henry)

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Henry) Woah... Well I could be
 your girlfriend...

(Henry grows excited; so does
 Jaffa. They both smile)

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Henry) Boyfriend and girlfriend
 it is...

HENRY
 (in love; to Edith) Stay... Um... I'd like
 you to stay for a bit today...

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Henry) Okay sure... Okay...

(Henry tries to kiss Jaffa on the
 lips; but is shy. Jaffa notices
 Henry trying; and smiles)

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Henry) Hey... It's okay. It goes
 like this...

(Jaffa and Henry kiss each other
 on the lips. Henry smiles out of
 love)

HENRY
 (in love; to Jaffa) I... I uh... I love
 you...

JAFFA
 (in love; to Henry) Me to.

HENRY
 (in love; to Jaffa) Me protect you at all
 costs... Like I do with my grandmother...

JAFFA
 (in love; to Henry) That's my man-

(Henry smiles and picks Jaffa up.
 Jaffa smiles at Henry in his arms;
 as Henry carries her to the
 hayshed. Jaffa smiles)

JAFFA
 (in love; to Henry) Where are you taking me
 Honey??

(Henry likes to be called "Honey"
 and smiles as he continues
 carrying her to a secret location)

HENRY
 (in love; to Jaffa) Somewhere special...

(Jaffa smiles as she grows excited
 to where her newfound boyfriend is
 taking her)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - INSIDE
 HAYSHED

Made in Highland

(Henry enters the hayshed and closes the door; and sits Jaffa down on the hay. Henry sits beside her in love; and smiles)

JAFFA

(in love; to Jaffa) What shall we do now?
Let me think-

(Jaffa looks at Henry's black work shirt. Henry smiles as Jaffa takes Henry's shirt off. Henry and Jaffa giggle at each other; as this is their first romantic time together)

JAFFA

(smiles to Henry) So uh... So um...

(Henry smiles as Jaffa puts her hands on his bare chest; Henry holds Jaffa's hand on his chest and smiles; Jaffa feels Henry's heartbeat)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) I can feel your heartbeat... It's... It's beating steady...

(Henry smiles, and hugs Jaffa tightly; Jaffa feels the warmth of Henry's skin touching hers. Henry smiles in love as he hugs her; Jaffa smiles to)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) You're so warm.

(Henry continues smiling in love)

HENRY

(hugging Jaffa) Good. That's good. I want you warm... I... I don't want you to freeze...

(Jaffa smiles in love. MEANWHILE, Suzie calls for her daughter Jaffa. Henry stops hugging Jaffa, and grabs his shirt - and puts it back on. Henry opens the door; and notices Suzie. Edith can tell instantly Jaffa and Henry made out; as Henry's shirt is back-to-front)

SUZIE

(to Henry) Hi... um Henry. Is my daughter Jaffa here??

HENRY

(to Suzie) Yeah... Yeah she is... She's here...

(Henry opens the hayshed door further; allowing Suzie to see her daughter Jaffa. Jaffa smiles and notices her mother)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Suzie) Yeah... What's up Mumma?

SUZIE

(to Jaffa) Time to go home sweetie. I'd like to take you out for dinner tonight...

JAFFA

(to Suzie) Okay Mumma...

(Jaffa smiles as she looks at Henry. Henry smiles at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Bye BF. Bye...

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) Bye... Bye...

(Jaffa stands up and waves goodbye to Henry. Henry stands up and smiles; as he waves goodbye to his newfound girlfriend. Jaffa walks towards her mother; Suzie smiles as she looks at her daughter)

JAFFA

(to Edith) Alright Edith... I'm off. We're off...

EDITH

(to Suzie & Jaffa) Righto. See you both of you. Have a great night out..

JAFFA

(to Edith) Bye Edith... (waves goodbye to Henry) Bye Henry...

HENRY

(waves goodbye to Jaffa) Bye...

(Jaffa and Suzie leave. Edith smiles as she looks at Henry)

EDITH

(to Henry) Well don't you look happy...

HENRY
 (smiles; to Edith) Yeah... (chuckles)
 Yeah... I am...

EDITH
 (to Henry) Loviee...Dove. Dove..

(Henry chuckles at his
 grandmother; at Edith's
 identification of Henry's love for
 Jaffa)

EDITH
 (chuckles; to Henry) Lovebird room, is it?

HENRY
 (chuckles; to Edith) Yeah.... Yeah it is...

EDITH
 (chuckles; to Henry) Oh I know it is... (to
 Henry) Your shirt's on back to front...

(Henry looks down at his back-to-
 front black work shirt. Henry
 takes his shirt off, and turns it
 inside out. He then puts the shirt
 back on. Henry smiles at Edith)

HENRY
 (to Edith) Grandma... Grandma.. I...

EDITH
 (to Henry) What is it Henry...

(Henry hugs his grandmother
 tightly; not wanting to let go)

HENRY
 (to Edith) I... I love you....

EDITH
 (to Henry) I love you to Henry...

(Henry recalls not exchanging
 phone numbers with Jaffa; and gets
 annoyed to himself)

HENRY
 (annoyed to himself) Dammit... Damn...

(Edith questions Henry)

EDITH
 (concerned; to Henry) What is it Henry??

HENRY
 (annoyed to himself) I forgot to get her
 number... How do I contact Jaffa when I want
 to talk to her?

EDITH
 (to Henry) Next time you see her... I'll
 remind you to ask her...

HENRY
 (smiles; to Edith) Thanks Grandma...

(Edith smiles)

EDITH
 (to Henry) Come on... I'm going to start
 making dinner... Sausage Stir Fry...
 Yummy...

(Henry smiles)

HENRY
 (smiles; to Edith) It is indeed...

(Moments later - Henry follows his
 grandmother inside)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING
 ROOM

(Henry sits at the table; and
 smiles as he thinks of Jaffa; and
 watches his grandmother cook. Fred
 is watching the television;
 flicking through the television
 channels; struggling to find
 anything to watch)

FRED
 (annoyed to himself) Can't find anything
 bloody decent...

EDITH
 (concerned; to Fred) What about the cricket?
 When's that on?

FRED
 (to Edith) Tuesday and Wednesday Nights.
 Green and gold game on Wednesday night...
 Can't wait for that...

EDITH
 (to Fred) There's got to be something on.
 What about a comedy TV show??

(Fred flicks through the channel; and notices a comedy show. He leaves the comedy show on. Henry smiles as he still continues thinking about his girlfriend, Jaffa - Edith notices)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) What are you thinking about Mister?

HENRY

(smiles; to Edith) Grandma... I... I want to take Jaffa on a date night... I want to spend the night with her one night...

(Fred is shocked to see how quickly Henry has fallen in love with Jaffa)

FRED

(to Edith) Henry's got the hots for Jaffa mate. Big time...

EDITH

(smiles; to Fred) Fred. It's young love... We've all been through it...

(Henry smiles as he thinks of the ideal date night with his girlfriend Jaffa)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Well you could always ask next time you speak to her...

HENRY

(excited; to Jaffa) Oh I can't wait... I just can't...

(15 minutes later - Edith serves out dishes of sausage stir fry to herself, Henry, and Fred)

HENRY

(to Edith) Thanks Grandma... Thank you...

(Edith smiles as she sees her grandson deeply in love with Jaffa. The three begin eating their meal in their respectful places. Henry finishes and burps again; and chuckles)

HENRY

(smiles; to Edith) Delicious Grandma.... Absolutely Delicious...

(Henry burps even louder. Edith chuckles and laughs)

EDITH

(chuckles; to Henry) Goodness Gracious Henry... You must love every meal... burping after every meal.

(Henry licks his tongue)

HENRY

(chuckles; to Edith) Delicious...

EDITH

(chuckles; to Henry) Oh I can tell it is for you...

(Henry smiles; stands up and rinses his dishes. Henry puts the hot water on blasting hot; but can not feel the heat - due to his immunity to fire and heat. He begins washing the dishes; Edith notices)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Oh are you washing the dishes tonight Henry...

HENRY

(smiles to Edith) Yes Grandma... Yes I am...

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Well aren't you a good man... Good on ya Henry...

(Henry smiles and finishes washing the dishes 5 mins later. Henry smiles at his grandmother, as he finishes)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) All done eh...

(Henry nods his head and smiles, at his grandmother. Edith yawns as it 9pm)

EDITH

(yawns; to Henry) Well uh... I might head to bed now... You have a good night sleep Mister.

HENRY

(to Edith) You have a good night sleep to Grandma... Me love you...

(Henry hugs his grandmother tightly)

EDITH
 (hugging Henry) Goodnight Henry...
 Goodnight...

HENRY
 (hugging Edith) Goodnight Grandma...

(Henry stops hugging Edith minutes later. Edith heads to bed moments later; Henry notices Fred having fallen asleep at the TV)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S
 RESERVED ROOM

(Henry walks to his room, and takes his black work shirt off - throwing it in his laundry basket. Henry changes into green trunks; and throws his gold baggage pants in the wash, and becomes barefoot - after taking his black heavy-duty boots off. Henry hops into his bed; and smiles as he thinks of Jaffa all night. THE NEXT MORNING - Henry's eyes awaken with the sun blaring in his eyes from the barn window. Henry smiles as he sits up on his bed; and turns his head toward the window - and notices his grandmother helping Fred weed the garden. Henry hops out of bed; stretches his arms and legs; and smiles as he stands up.

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(Henry makes his way toward his grandmother; and smiles. Edith notices her shirtless grandson by her side)

EDITH
 (to Henry) Good morning Mister...

(Henry smiles at his grandmother)

HENRY
 (smiles; to Edith) Hey Grandma... Hey...

(Edith finishes weeding the front garden; and stops; and takes a break. Henry immediately hugs his grandmother; for his first morning hug. Edith smiles)

EDITH
(to Henry) How was your sleep?

HENRY
(smiles; to Edith) Alright Grandma... I was... I was thinking about Jaffa all night... I was...

EDITH
(to Henry) Oh that reminds me... She left her hat here... so she's coming today... ask her out on a date then...

(Henry smiles as he grows excited)

HENRY
(smiles; to Edith) Okay... I will... I will...

(Henry hugs his grandmother in excitement. Henry lets go and walks to his room - and changes into black shorts, sporting blue thongs, and a blue graphic tee with the words "I ROCK." Minutes later; Jaffa arrives with her mother in the purple hatchback. Henry notices the hatchback; and grows excited to see Jaffa. Jaffa hops out of the car; wearing a purple tank top with blue jeans; sporting gold sandals. Jaffa notices Henry; Henry hugs Jaffa tightly; not wanting to let go. Suzie notices Henry is in love with her daughter)

JAFFA
(hugging Henry) Hey my Man...

HENRY
(hugging Jaffa) Hey Gorgeous... Hey... My beautiful... girlfriend...

(Jaffa smiles to Henry's romantic words)

HENRY
(hugging Jaffa) I uh... I'd like to...

JAFFA
(hugging Henry) What?

HENRY
(hugging Henry) I'd like to... take you on a date...

(Jaffa smiles by Henry's request, and agrees)

Made in Highland

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) Sure thing... Sure...

HENRY

(hugging Jaffa) I'd like to have the night with you... I mean. I'd book us a hotel and everything...

(Henry stops hugging Jaffa; and smiles at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Oh... so... like... a romantic date... Yes... Yes of course...

(Henry smiles. Jaffa agrees; they both grow excited of their next romantic time together. Henry and Jaffa hug. Suzie and Edith watch Henry and Jaffa hug)

SUZIE

(to Edith) If only Beth was alive... she'd be so happy to see her son fall in love with my daughter.

EDITH

(to Suzie) Yes she would.

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) Wear something handsome please... Tuxedo...

HENRY

(hugging Jaffa) And you wear something pretty.... like a dress.

(Jaffa kisses Henry on the cheek and stops hugging Henry)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) I shall go get myself ready...

(Henry smiles. Jaffa looks at the words "I ROCK" on Henry's blue graphic tee)

JAFFA

(to Henry) And yes... You do rock handsome...

(Henry chuckles out of love. Jaffa makes her way towards Suzie and Edith. Henry watches from a distance)

JAFFA

(to Suzie) Mumma. We've got to get home... quick...

EDITH

(questions Jaffa) Why? What's going on...?

JAFFA

(to Edith) Henry is taking me on a date tonight... I need to wear a nice pretty dress. (thinking; to Suzie) Like that nice short pink dress I've got... Come on Mumma.

(Suzie smiles as her daughter will be taken out on a date for the first time)

SUZIE

(smiles; to Jaffa) Righto Sweetie. Righto... Okay Darling... Let's get going...

(Suzie smiles in excitement, and looks at Henry. She smiles; Henry smiles back. Edith hands Jaffa the hat she forgot yesterday; her white winter bucket hat. Jaffa and Suzie make their way to the hatchback)

SUZIE

(to Edith) Righto... Bye Edith.

EDITH

(to Suzie & Jaffa) Bye you two...

(Jaffa waves to her boyfriend Henry; Henry waves goodbye back until their date. Jaffa and Suzie leave. Edith looks at Henry, and approaches Henry)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Well you're out on a date tonight... Aren't you?

(Henry smiles and hugs his grandmother tightly)

HENRY

(to Edith) Grandma... Jaffa wants me to wear something handsome... like a tuxedo...

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) I would just wear a blazer with a button-up shirt, some pants, and some boots. That'll be fine...

HENRY

(to Edith) Grandma... I don't think I've got that... Oh no... How?

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) What about if I pick it up from the shops for you? Just stay... I think Fred wants you to help him carry another load of wood to the shed. So while you do that... I can pick up that blazer, eh..

(Henry smiles and hugs his grandmother tightly)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) Righto... I might head there now...

HENRY

(smiles; to Edith) Okay Grandma... Righto... See you when you get back...

EDITH

(hugging Henry) Okay... I shall be back...

(Edith leaves in Fred's sedan car; and drives to the shops to pick up Henry's date clothes for the night. Henry smiles; Fred approaches Henry)

FRED

(to Henry) Righto Henry... Could you uh help me move this wood to the shed again? You're younger and much stronger than I am...

(Henry agrees and begins carrying a heavy load of wood by his hands to the shed. 10 minutes later, he finishes)

FRED

(to Henry) Thanks Henry...

(A pause)

FRED

(to Henry) Righto... That's done... You do save me a lot of work... thanks..

HENRY

(to Fred) It's okay...

FRED

(to Henry) I uh...

(MORE)

FRED (CONT'D)

I thought about what you asked me the other day... about you wanting to call me "Dad" for now on; even though I'm not your father.... I spoke to your grandmother about it, and she agreed - seeing as you don't have much of a father figure in your life. So yeah... you can... you can call me "Dad" for now on...

(Henry smiles of the news; now given permission to call "Fred" his Dad for now on; despite him not being his biological father)

HENRY

(smiles; to Fred) Thanks Dad...

(Henry wishes to hug Fred; Fred notices and hugs Henry)

FRED

(hugging Henry) Have a good night out son.

(Henry smiles as he likes being called 'son' by Fred)

HENRY

(smiles; to Fred) Thanks Dad... And I will...

(Edith returns home with Henry's date night clothes for tonight. Fred stops hugging Henry; Henry smiles and makes his way toward his grandmother. Edith shows Henry the date-night clothes she has purchased for him)

HENRY

(to Edith) Grandma... I could have paid for it... I could-

(Edith locks the car doors by the switch)

EDITH

(to Henry) No I wanted to. Your mother would want to if she was alive to...

(Henry looks at the date-night clothes his grandmother has purchased for him - a red blazer, with a white-button up shirt, and black pants, with black boots. Henry smiles as he holds the blazer up, and looks at it up high. Henry smiles at his grandmother)

HENRY
 (smiles; to Edith) I like it Grandma... I really like it...

EDITH
 (smiles; to Henry) I'm glad you do... I'm happy you do...

(Henry hugs his grandmother with the blazer in his hand)

EDITH
 (hugging Henry) Righto... This should be a great night for you Henry. First date and everything-

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother)

HENRY
 (smiles; to Edith) It will be...

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S RESERVED RESIDENCE

(HOUR PASS, IT IS NIGHT - Henry is getting changed - and takes his blue graphic tee shirt off; throwing it in the laundry basket. Henry puts on his white-button up shirt; doing the buttons. Henry then puts on the black pants; and the red blazer overlapping the white button-up shirt. Henry then puts his formal black shoes on; and smiles to himself - excited for the date he is having with his girlfriend Jaffa. Henry calls out for his grandmother; to showcase his formal look for the date-night. Edith approaches Henry's room, and notices a formal Henry all dressed up)

EDITH
 (looks at Henry) Wow Henry... You look... Jaffa is going to think you look handsome...

(Henry smiles out of excitement)

HENRY
 (to Edith) I'm going to tell her you picked the clothes out...

(Edith chuckles)

EDITH

(looks at Henry) I'm so happy for you
Henry... So happy...

(Henry smiles and looks at his
grandmother. Edith thinks of the
hotel bookings Henry has booked
for)

EDITH

(to Henry) Do you know which hotel you're
going to?

HENRY

(to Edith) Yeah... I would like to take her
to a fancy one, but I can't afford it... So
maybe the one on Jane Street... Jane Street
Motel I think it's called...

EDITH

(to Henry) Oh that'll be nice... Yeah...
Take her there...

HENRY

(saddened; to Edith) We're going to
SturtsFish. I just wish... I wish I could
take her to mum's Diner. But because of that
incident... with me... I'm banned from that
place... because-

(Henry cries to himself; recalling
the incident - the incident where
he hurt the bartender severely,
Fred severely, and severely hurt
his grandmother - nearly killing
her. Edith sympathises with Henry)

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Henry. Don't worry about
it... it happened months ago... It's okay...

HENRY

(cries; to Edith) It still haunts me... That
day...

EDITH

(comforts Henry) Henry... It was an
accident. I know that... That guy spiked
that drink he gave you... That's why you
can't trust some people... especially at the
bar where there's alcohol around...

HENRY

(breathes; to Edith) You're right Grandma...
You're right... I won't let that happen
again...

(Moments pass - Henry is ready for
the date-night and grabs his
wallet)

EDITH
(to Henry) You all ready to go?

HENRY
(smiles; to Edith) Yes...

EDITH
(to Henry) Righto... I'll drive you there...

(Henry smiles as he hops into Fred's sedan. Edith drives Henry off to SturtsFish - a fancy, poshy, five-star expensive restaurant)

INT. STURTSFISH - OUTSIDE

(They arrive at Sturtfish; Henry and Edith notice the purple hatchback parking in front of them. Henry and Edith notice Jaffa exiting the car in a short pink dress, with pink sandals, and braided brown curls. Henry is in awe; looking at her girlfriend, dressed in all-formal wear)

EDITH
(to Henry) Oh your girlfriend looks pretty Henry...

HENRY
(in awe; to Edith) Grandma... She looks... She looks so beautiful...

EDITH
(to Henry) Time to make an appearance.... Off you go...

(Henry smiles as he hops out of the sedan. Jaffa notices Henry all dressed up in a red blazer; a white button-up shirt; and black pants; sporting formal black boots. Jaffa approaches Henry; Henry is nervous yet excited of the first date. Edith watches Henry from the car, approach his girlfriend)

SUZIE
(to Jaffa) Have fun Jaffa. (to Henry) You to Henry...

HENRY
(to Suzie) I will... I so will...

(Suzie smiles and says goodbye to Jaffa. She drives off; so does Edith. Henry and Jaffa now alone; look at each other)

JAFFA

(looks at Henry's attire) Now don't you look handsome...

(Henry smiles)

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) And don't you look pretty-

(Jaffa smiles)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Let's head inside...

INT. STURTSFISH - INSIDE

(Henry and Jaffa hold hands; and head inside the fancy restaurant. They front the female receptionist at the restaurant)

RECEPTIONIST

(to Henry) Hello. Welcome to Sturtsfish... How many for dinner tonight?

HENRY

(socially awkward; to Receptionist) Two... Just two..

(The receptionist chuckles at Henry's social awkwardness. The receptionist books Table 2)

RECEPTIONIST JANE

(to Henry) Righto... Table 2... Have a good night...

(Henry and Jaffa hold hands; and head to Table 2. They sit down at the table together. Henry and Jaffa can't stop looking at each other; as they are in love)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) That attire is truly handsome Henry... A well-done pick...

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) Thanks... Grandma picked it out for me...

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Well she is quite the fashion stylist...

(Jaffa holds out her hand to Henry. Henry holds Jaffa's hand and smiles in love. They chuckle at each other)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Anyway... what shall we order??

(Henry smiles as he watches Jaffa look at the menu. He looks at his own menu, and scans the menu with his eyes for specials)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) I think I might get the Lamb Chops and Salad. That sounds... yum...

(Henry licks his tongue in delight. Jaffa laughs)

JAFFA

(to Henry) I might order the Thai Salad and Chips. Yummy. It's on special to...

(Jaffa and Henry smile at each other)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Oh what about drinks. I might get some wine... Some red wine... Would you like some??

(Henry shakes his head quickly - afraid of getting drunk or his wine getting spiked by someone at the bar; leading him to another fiery tirade)

HENRY

(worried; to Jaffa) You can. But um... (shakes head) I won't be...

JAFFA

(to Henry) You sure Henry?

HENRY

(nods head; to Jaffa) I'm sure...

(Henry thinks about the incident at Beth's Diner, and becomes saddened by the memory. Jaffa worries about Henry; and holds his hand)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Hey Henry... Are you okay?

(Henry nods his head; and tries to remain strong. The waitress arrives; Henry & Jaffa order their meals. Jaffa turns her attention back to Henry)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Don't you like wine?

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) No it's not that... Something... Something happened... I just...

(Henry puts his head down; and is haunted by the memory. Jaffa worries about Henry)

JAFFA

(reassures Henry) Hey... It's okay... You don't have to tell me if you don't want me to...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) No I want to... I'm scared of what you may think of me... if I do...

JAFFA

(reassures Henry) Henry... I've got schizophrenia. I've went crazy and hurt you badly...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) And I've hurt you badly...

JAFFA

(reassures) At my own fault... It's okay Henry... We've all got our issues... It's okay... I won't judge. I'm your girlfriend - you can tell me anything that concerns you, and I'll listen. And I'll try to help you...

(Henry begins to cry as he thinks of the haunting memory; and breathes as he tells Jaffa)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Grandma took me and Fred out for lunch... at um... at Beth's Diner...

JAFFA

(to Henry) Your mum's Diner.

(Henry nods his head)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Yes... and um... They were getting drinks at the bar... I said I didn't want any... and then... and then...

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) Hey... It's okay... It's okay...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I was... I was waiting at the bar... and I... and this guy at the bar saw that I declined a drink... this guy starts talking to me.. and tells me that... That I'll get dehydrated if I don't drink enough fluid...

(Jaffa continues to listen Henry)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) And then I uh... He asked if I had anyone I wanted to protect... I said yes... it was my grandma... and he then said... if I get dehydrated from not drinking enough fluid... I'll collapse and I'll not be able to protect Grandma from danger...

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) That's if any crazy drunks come to the bar and go ballistic and crazy, and try to fight you or attack her-

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Well I... I uh... I took his advice and drank the drink... I was an idiot...

(Jaffa knows where the climax of the story is heading, and interrupts Henry)

JAFFA

(to Henry) He spiked your drink. Didn't he??

(Henry nods his head; haunted by the memory)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) And I... minutes later... I went crazy... and I... I hurt a lot of people that day...

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) Hey... It wasn't your fault...

(The meals are served by the waitress)

HENRY & JAFFA

(to Waitress) Thank you.

(The waitress leaves)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I went so crazy though... I get scared thinking about it...

JAFFA

(to Henry) What? You threw a lot of punches or something?

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) No. I uh. I...

(Henry points at his chest; trying to signify his blazement within himself. Jaffa doesn't understand)

JAFFA

(confused; to Henry) Your chest...

(Henry shakes his head; and grabs a napkin. He writes on it "FIRE." Jaffa reads the text on the napkin; and thinks to how violent Henry would have been in that scenario due to the spiked drink he had in his system. Jaffa emphasises with Henry, Henry becomes scared by the haunted memory)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) Hey... It's okay... It's okay...

(Jaffa holds Henry's hand tightly. Henry looks at Jaffa's hand holding his; he looks up and smiles at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) Hey... It wasn't your fault... It wasn't... It's okay...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I hurt three people badly that night. I remember everyone screaming... they were scared of me...

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) It's okay Henry... It's all over... Let's eat our delicious dinner. Let's do it. Bog in, don't wait-

(Jaffa and Henry eat their meals. Henry tries to not be animalistic and rip the lamb chops with his teeth; and instead eats with a knife and fork. 5 minutes later; Henry and Edith finish eating their meals. Henry burps loud)

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Henry) Well you enjoyed your meal there, didn't you?

HENRY

(burps the words) I DID.

(Henry and Jaffa chuckle at each other)

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Henry) Goodness, you're a funny man.

(Henry smiles and stands up. Jaffa stands up as well)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) I'm going to pay for our meals... I'll meet you outside...

JAFFA

(to Henry) Agreed. I'll wait for you outside honey.

(Henry likes being called "Honey" and pays for the meals at the cashier. The transaction is complete; Henry makes his way outside to Jaffa. Henry and Jaffa hold hands; and walk down to the motel at 9pm at night)

JAFFA

(walking; to Henry) So which motel?

HENRY

(walking; to Jaffa) Jane Street Motel...

(They continue walking to the motel. 15 minutes later; they arrive at Jane Street Motel - Henry & Jaffa check in to Motel Number 5, and enter the motel room)

 INT. JANE STREET MOTEL - MOTEL NUMBER 5

(Henry opens the motel room door 5, and enters the motel with his girlfriend Jaffa. He closes the door behind him, and smiles at Jaffa. Jaffa looks at Henry)

JAFFA
 (to Henry) Well uh... Here we are...

(Henry smiles. Jaffa looks at Henry's red razor and takes it off. Henry smiles as Jaffa undoes the buttons off of Henry's white button-up shirt making him shirtless; Jaffa smiles; Henry and Jaffa chuckle as this is their second romantic time; Jaffa drops Henry's clothes on the floor; Henry smiles at Jaffa)

JAFFA
 (to Henry) So uh... Did you have a nice meal???

HENRY
 (to Jaffa) Yeah... Yeah I did...

JAFFA
 (to Henry) Same... Thanks Henry for the meal...

(Henry looks at Jaffa romantically; and they both hug. They then look at each other; and kiss each other passionately on the lips. They kiss each other again; Henry and Jaffa look at each other and smile)

JAFFA
 (questions Henry) You uh... You having fun??

HENRY
 (smiles at Jaffa) So much fun... So much...

(Henry carries Jaffa; Jaffa smiles as she is being carried by Henry)

JAFFA

(points at Henry's nose) Where are you taking me Honey?

HENRY

(smiles; carrying Jaffa) Never you mind...

(Henry lays Jaffa in the queen-size hotel bed; Henry hops in the queen-size; bending downwards towards Jaffa. Henry starts kissing Jaffa in the hotel bed for 5 minutes; Henry and Jaffa look at each other passionately after; and smile. Jaffa puts her hand on Henry's barechest; feeling Henry's heartbeat)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) You are having fun... Adrenaline big time...

(Henry smiles and holds Jaffa's hand at his barechest. Henry's heartbeat rises out of loving hormones and adrenaline)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Good man...

(Henry starts kissing Jaffa once again; for 5 minutes straight. They finish; Henry lays down in bed; beside Jaffa. Jaffa looks at Henry laying beside her)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) That was... That was good...

(Henry and Jaffa smile; out of their fun romantic time together)

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) It was... It was fun...

(Henry and Jaffa chuckle to each other; out of the delight they both felt during their second romantic time together)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Who knew you could be a good kisser?

HENRY
 (in love; to Jaffa) I can do much better
 than that...

JAFFA
 (in love; to Jaffa) Oh can you now?

(Jaffa chuckles. Moments later;
 Henry looks at Jaffa and smiles.
 Jaffa holds out her hand to Henry;
 Henry holds Jaffa's hand)

HENRY
 (in love; to Jaffa) I uh... I love you
 Jaffa.

JAFFA
 (in love; to Henry) Me to... I love you to
 my handsome man...

(Henry excitedly leaps forward
 towards Jaffa; and begins a
 kissing spree once again; Jaffa
 holds Henry's arms as she kisses
 Henry)

HENRY
 (kissing Jaffa) I love you... So... Damn...
 Much...

JAFFA
 (kissing Henry) I love you to... handsome...

(Henry smiles as he keeps kissing
 Jaffa; and stops minutes later;
 laying back down beside Jaffa
 minutes later. Henry smiles and
 chuckles out of love)

JAFFA
 (in love; to Henry) Now that was better...

(Henry chuckles as he looks at
 Jaffa)

JAFFA
 (in love; to Henry) That was so much more
 better...

(Henry and Jaffa chuckle; Henry
 turns his head to the side; and
 looks at Jaffa)

JAFFA
 (puts hand on Henry's barechest) This
 night... is a night to remember...

HENRY
 (in love; to Jaffa) Yes... it surely is...

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) So uh... Tell me more about yourself... Your ability... So we get to know each other more... as man and woman...

(Henry smiles)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Okay I... I uh...

(Henry holds Jaffa's hand. Jaffa feels the warmth of Henry's hand touching hers)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) You're so warm...

(Henry moves closer to the side; near Jaffa. Henry wraps his arms and chest around Jaffa; keeping her warm with his body heat)

JAFFA

(questions Henry) What are you doing?

HENRY

(in love; to Henry) Keeping my girlfriend warm...

(Jaffa feels the warmth of Henry's skin touch hers)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Thanks handsome...

(Henry smiles)

JAFFA

(to Henry) So uh... Your fire ability... Tell me more about it...

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Um... I've had it since I can remember. It's just gotten so much stronger now... my ability...

JAFFA

(to Henry) Because you've aged... that's why....

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Yeah... I uh... You're right...

JAFFA

(to Henry) I can help you control your abilities like your grandma does...

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) Really? You would... you would do that?

JAFFA

(to Henry) Of course 'firebaby.'

(Henry likes being called a 'firebaby' by his girlfriend Jaffa, and smiles)

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) I like being called that... I only want you to call me that...

JAFFA

(to Henry) Well you are handsome...

(Henry kisses Jaffa on the lips softly in love)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) You can do better than that...

(Henry excitedly starts making out with Jaffa once again - kissing her in his arms; then laying her back down in bed - kissing her repeatedly with passion; Jaffa holds Henry's arms as she kisses him. Henry doesn't want to stop; Jaffa smiles and continues kissing Henry. Jaffa's phone rings unexpectedly, Henry stops kissing Jaffa; and looks at Jaffa's ringing phone)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Hang on handsome... I'm going to have to answer this one...

(Henry agrees and hops off the bed; Jaffa sits up and answers the phone call. Henry smiles as he watches his girlfriend chat on the phone; Jaffa watches Henry's skinny but very strong physique. It is Jaffa's mother on the phone)

JAFFA

(on phone) Yes Mumma. I'm fine... I'm all good...

(Henry picks his red blazer up off of the ground and turns it inside out; he does the same with the white button-up shirt)

JAFFA

(on phone) Mumma. I'm fine... I'm fine... Please.... Yes Mumma. Chickpea Curry I will make tomorrow for din-din...

(Jaffa rolls her eyes at Henry; annoyed by her mother's need to keep talking)

JAFFA

(on phone) Yes okay Mumma. I really need to go, okay... Bye...

(Jaffa hangs the phone call up; and looks at Henry holding his red blazer and white button-up shirt)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Hey... They stay off for the night...

(Henry chuckles in love as he drops the clothes on the floor once again)

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) I know... I know... Captain...

(Henry smiles as he looks at Jaffa; and runs on top of the bed in a sudden move - making out with Jaffa once again. Jaffa and Henry chuckle - Henry continues kissing Jaffa; Jaffa holds Henry's arms as he kisses her)

HENRY

(kisses Jaffa) I... Don't... Want... To stop...

JAFFA

(kisses Henry) I know... The passion in your heart is there...

(Henry continues kissing Jaffa for another 10 minutes. Jaffa smiles and puts her hand on Henry's barechest; once again; Henry looks down at his barechest; and notices Jaffa's hand; Henry looks back up at Jaffa and smiles)

JAFFA
 (to Henry) My strong... handsome... man...

HENRY
 (to Jaffa) Yes... I am... And I always will
 be...

(Jaffa smiles; as she is in love)

JAFFA
 (to Henry) I know...

(Henry and Jaffa make out for
 hours and hours. They eventually
 grow tired; and fall asleep next
 to each other. IT IS THE NEXT
 MORNING AT 2AM - Gunshot wounds
 are heard near the motel room
 door. Henry and Jaffa panic)

JAFFA
 (petrified; to Henry) GUNS--

(Henry fears the worse may happen)

HENRY
 (screams to Jaffa) HIDE... JAFFA... HIDE...
 QUICK... QUICK...

(The army has arrived to capture
 Henry - for assault and damage to
 the police force, and the secret
 service. Henry hears walkie-
 talkies out the front; Jaffa hides
 under the motel queen-size bed;
 Henry panics and tries to calm
 down)

ARMY LIEUTENANT
 (knocks on door) OPEN UP. THE ARMY IS
 HERE... I KNOW YOU ARE THERE HENRY JAMES
 LOVELL... OPEN UP...

(Henry fears the worse; of his
 grandma being possibly captured;
 and fears Jaffa may be to. Henry
 manages to calm down; using the
 relaxation technique his
 grandmother taught him -
 diminishing the flames off
 himself)

ARMY LIEUTENANT
 (knocks on door) OPEN UP. OR THERE WILL BE
 CONSEQUENCES...

(Henry uses his strength and keeps
 the door closed tight.)

The Army Lieutenant knows Henry is using his strength; to prevent the motel room door from being opened - trying to protect Jaffa)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(to 2nd Lieutenant) He's bloody strong... this one...

(Jaffa panics as she watches Henry prevent the door from being opened using the strength of his back)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(knocks on door) OPEN UP...

(Henry uses his strength to avoid the door from being opened. Henry quickly puts a chair against the door; puts his white button-on shirt and red blazer on himself)

HENRY

(whispers to Jaffa) Jaffa. Come out... We're getting out of here... I'm going to take you home...

(Jaffa panics and slides under the bed. Henry helps Jaffa up; grabs her belongings; opens the window; and puts Jaffa on his back; Henry carefully climbs out the window of the motel room. More soldiers follow in; and find no Henry)

2ND LIEUTENANT

(to Army Lieutenant) Sir... Henry's gone...

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(to 2nd Lieutenant) Yes he has... He's escaped... Find him... use weapons whatever you have to; kidnap his loved ones; stun him if you have to... I want him... (to soldiers) GO...

(The soldiers prepare to target Henry. BACK TO HENRY & JAFFA)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) Why?? Why are the army after you??

HENRY

(climbing down; to Jaffa) Long story... But they found me...

(Henry stands on ground; with Jaffa on his back. Henry scans for army soldiers with his eyes)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) They're coming
Henry... It's the army after all...

HENRY

(stressing; to Jaffa) I know they are... I
know...

(One army soldier with an assault
rifle; notices Henry with Jaffa.
Henry and Jaffa notice the army
soldier)

ARMY SOLDIER

(via walkie-talkie) He's turning the corner
now...

JAFFA

(panics; to Henry) Henry... Run... Run...

(Henry runs back to Fred's Farm
Ranch Residence; with Jaffa on his
back; escaping the army radar for
a short time)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(Henry makes his way to the farm
ranch residence; and notices Edith
by the barn entrance door. Edith
notices Henry with Jaffa on his
back; Edith notices a stressing
Henry)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Hey Henry... What's
up??

HENRY

(panicking; to Edith) Grandma... You were
right... They're after me...

(Henry puts Jaffa down on the
ground. Jaffa worries about Henry)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Who Henry??? Who's
after you??

HENRY

(panicking; to Edith) You were right... You
were right...

(Two big army tanks of Henry enter
Fred's Farm Ranch Residence; in
search of Henry. Henry, Edith,
Fred & Jaffa notice)

Made in Highland

HENRY
(panicking; to Edith) Oh No... Oh no...

FRED
(concerned; to Henry) Henry. This is going to be bloody. Serious injury is about to happen...

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) Henry....

JAFFA
(stressing; to Henry) Henry...

(The Army Lieutenant steps out of the tank and pulls out an assault rifle; and aims it at Henry's chest from a distance)

ARMY LIEUTENANT
(to Henry) FREEZE YOUNG MAN... FREEZE...
YOU'VE DONE ENOUGH RUNNING...

(Henry stands beside Jaffa and Edith)

ARMY LIEUTENANT
(to Henry) DON'T YOU THINK ABOUT MOVING.
I'VE GOT SNIPERS EVERYWHERE... ONE STEP...
CONSEQUENCES WILL HAPPEN...

EDITH
(to Army Lieutenant) Please sir... Please...
let me explain...

ARMY LIEUTENANT
(annoyed; to Edith) Explain what ma'am...
your grandson is a bloody danger to this town. Attacking the police force, burning the police station down, the secret service, that INCIDENT at the diner. He's an unstoppable force - the only way to control this monster is with people he loves...

(Henry panics as the 2nd Lieutenant grabs Edith; Henry screams in fear of losing his grandmother; Jaffa notices Henry's fear)

HENRY
(screams; to Army Lieutenant) No... No...
What do you want?? PLEASE... PLEASE DON'T
TAKE HER FROM ME... SHE MEANS EVERYTHING TO
ME...

(The Army Lieutenant ignores Henry; and takes Edith to the tank; Edith panics. Henry screams in fear; Jaffa notices)

HENRY
 (screams; to Army Lieutenant) HEY. I'M
 TALKING TO YOU...

(Henry engulfs himself in flames;
 tearing off his red blazer and
 white button-up shirt; the army
 soldiers laugh at Henry's
 inability to keep a shirt on.
 Henry grows annoyed; and engulfs
 his hand in flames; and shoots a
 bolt of fire from his hand at the
 Army Lieutenant's gun. The Army
 Lieutenant drops the gun; and
 grows furious at Henry)

ARMY LIEUTENANT
 (furiously to Henry) YOU GODDAMN SHIRTLESS
 FREAK.

(Four soldiers aim their weapons
 at Henry's chest. The Army
 Lieutenant moves towards Henry in
 a fearsome way)

ARMY LIEUTENANT
 (furiously to Henry) DON'T YOU EVER-

(Henry forcefully grabs the Army
 Lieutenant by the neck and starts
 to choke him; the Army Lieutenant
 struggles)

2ND LIEUTENANT
 (yells to Henry) HEY. HEY...

(The 2nd Lieutenant aims an
 assault rifle at Henry once again)

HENRY
 (furiously; to 2nd Lieutenant) LET MY
 GRANDMA GO OR I WILL KILL HIM...

2ND LIEUTENANT
 (yells to Henry) LET THE Lieutenant GO...
 LET HIM...

HENRY
 (furiously; to 2nd Lieutenant) LET MY
 GRANDMA GO...

ARMY LIEUTENANT
 (struggles; to 2nd Lieutenant) Do what he
 says... Do what... Do as he says...

(The 2nd Lieutenant obeys the
 Lieutenant, and lets Edith free.
 Henry is still choking the Army
 Lieutenant; the 2nd Lieutenant
 obeys Henry)

2ND LIEUTENANT

(concerned; to Henry) Okay... Okay Henry...
She's free. She's free. That was the deal
right... Wasn't it??

(Henry refuses to let the Army
Lieutenant go. The Army Lieutenant
struggles and chokes; Henry lets
him go; the Army Lieutenant coughs
and struggles to breathe)

HENRY

(to Army Lieutenant) NOW GET OUT OF HERE...

(The Army Lieutenant coughs and
nods at the soldiers; to attack.
Moments later - the soldiers start
shooting at Henry, Henry ducks and
is annoyed he had been betrayed)

JAFFA

(frantic; to Henry) Henry.... Henry...

HENRY

(worried; to Jaffa) Jaffa... Hide... Hide...
Quick... Quick...

(More gunshot wounds fire near
Henry; Henry dodges and misses
them. The 2nd Lieutenant grabs
Edith; Henry notices and plans to
attack; but gets shot in the leg
in the process. Henry groans in
pain and falls to the ground. The
Army Lieutenant shoots Henry at
the leg with the assault rifle
once again; Henry groans in agony)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(furiously; to Henry) HOW DARE YOU?? HOW
DARE YOU HURT A SOLDIER LIKE THAT?? THE
THINGS I'VE DONE FOR THIS COUNTRY?

(Henry grabs the Army Lieutenant
by the foot; and angrily drags him
down. The Army Lieutenant groans
in the process as he falls down on
his back; Henry screams at the
Army Lieutenant and grabs his arm;
and burns it. The Army Lieutenant
screams. The soldiers come to
shoot Henry; Henry initiates a
blaze of fire from his hand
towards the soldiers. Most
soldiers fall; the 2nd Lieutenant
manages to drive Edith away to
lockup.

Henry notices and is enraged; The Army Lieutenant screams in agony from Henry's burns to his arm; but punches Henry out with his other hand to the forehead. Henry is unconscious; Jaffa cries frantically of her unconscious boyfriend. The Army Lieutenant groans in agony)

FRED

(to Army Lieutenant) It didn't have to go down like this...

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(groans to Fred) Blame shirtless. (to remaining soldiers) GET HIM IN THE TANK...

(The remaining, injured soldiers manage to drag Henry inside the army tank vehicle; The Army Lieutenant drags Jaffa and takes her in the tank. Fred is left out; all tanks travel to the army lock-up)

INT. TAYLOR ARMY BASE - ISOLATED LOCK-UP ROOM

(An unconscious Henry is in lock-up at the Army Base; with his arms and legs chained to the cell. Edith & Jaffa are locked up in separate cells in another location at the Army Base. The Army Lieutenant has a heavy-duty strong army bandage wrapped around his arm; and talks to his fellow soldiers on his walkie-talkie; giving out directives to them as his position stands. The Army Lieutenant enters Henry's separate cell; and watches an unconscious Henry wake up. Henry wakes up; and notices the Army Lieutenant - and screams; trying to break free but can't due to the chains)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(annoyed; to Henry) SHUT UP. You have no idea how much trouble you're in young man... trying to kill not only an Army Lieutenant, but an Army Soldier... someone who defends the country to save your ass and the country's ass. And this is how you pay your respects... you filth...

(Henry tries to break free; engulfing himself in flames; his bare chest, arms, and hands turning red up in flames; trying to break capture - but fails to the strong, heavy-duty chains)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(annoyed; to Henry) You're in big trouble Mister... And you will be in here for a long time... and you do what I say - or Granny and your girlfriend will get killed...

HENRY

(screams to Army Lieutenant) What... What do you want??? I never wanted this... I just wanted to have a peaceful life with my grandma; and now girlfriend... Why..

(The Army Lieutenant interrupts Henry)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(interrupts Henry) Because you're a goddamn threat to this country... The buildings you've destroyed; the people you've hurt... You're more powerful than the police force and the whole army base for crying out loud... You must do what I and the army direct you to do - or Granny and your girlfriend will be killed...

(Henry cries in fear of losing his grandmother and/or girlfriend; and obeys the Army Lieutenant)

HENRY

(cries; to Army Lieutenant) Okay... what? What do you want??? What???

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(to Henry) Nothing.... You're locked up here until further notice...

(Henry screams at the Army Lieutenant as he slams Henry's cell door shuts. The Army Lieutenant hears Henry scream loudly in anger and frustration. Henry continues to try to break free of his chains whilst being inflamed; and still fails. Henry screams; Edith and Jaffa hear in their separate cells)

INT. TAYLOR ARMY BASE - LOCK-UP CELLS

Made in Highland

(Edith and Jaffa talk to each other in their dark cells; where it is impossible to see each other or anything. They hear Henry's screams and become concerned)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Edith) What are they doing to him Edith?? What are they doing to Henry?

EDITH

(saddened; to Jaffa) God only knows...

JAFFA

(concerned; to Edith) God will look after him... He will. We've just got to have faith...

EDITH

(saddened; to Jaffa) It just makes me sad... it really just makes me sad... I wanted Henry to have a good life... This isn't a life to live...

JAFFA

(concerned; to Edith) It wasn't your fault Edith. You did the best you could - sure there were crooks around to ruin it. But you did the best you could... Henry still and will always love you...

EDITH

(saddened; to Jaffa) I hope... I just hope so...

(A pause)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Edith) How um? I was speaking to Henry about his ability on our date night... we didn't talk about it much... But I would like to know...

EDITH

(awaits question, to Jaffa) Yeah sure... What is the question?

JAFFA

(questions Edith) He... Henry told me has had this ability of his for years. Like how young...

EDITH

(to Jaffa) Since he was a toddler - I first discovered it...

JAFFA

(questions Edith) Was it hard? Like helping him control it and such-

EDITH

(to Jaffa) Well it was when he was a toddler... Because at that time you don't talk or understand what you're doing... So it was hard when he was incredibly young; but it got easier... Life has its challenges... but you've got to keep pushing forward...

JAFFA

(to Edith) You're right Edith... You are so right...

EDITH

(to Jaffa) But it was hard to watch him grow with it and become depressed by having that ability of his. I remember telling him for years - 'You've just got to accept it Henry. We will learn to control it together Henry. Mind over matter Henry.'

JAFFA

(to Edith) But you did it; you both did it. Teamwork I say...

EDITH

(to Jaffa) Yes... He grew up to be a really good grandson and we have pretty much full control over it. Except for the incidents where his drink had been spiked; he fought with his father, and a needle struck into him that attacked his nervous system - and he lost control.

JAFFA

(to Edith) He did tell me a bit about it... but became really upset about it...

(MEANWHILE - a shadow of a woman appears with a torchlight. Edith and Jaffa become concerned; to who it is)

JAFFA

(whispers to Edith) Who... Who?

(Suddenly; the lights of the dark lock-up cells turn on. Jaffa and Edith look each other in worry; then notice the shadow-woman is in fact Suzie, Jaffa's mum)

JAFFA

(whispers; to Suzie) Mumma... What? What...

(Suzie has been panicking; after learning her daughter had been locked up at Taylor Army Base. She is relieved she has found her daughter; and speaks loudly)

SUZIE

(loudly concerned; to Jaffa) Oh my Daughter... My Dear Daughter...

JAFFA

(whispers; to Suzie) Mumma. Quiet... Quiet...

(Suzie obeys her daughter; and stays quiet)

SUZIE

(whispers; to Jaffa) Jaffa... I was so concerned... so frightened. Why are you locked up in here?

EDITH

(whispers; to Suzie) Suzie. Henry is locked-up in some secure room in this building. The morning after Jaffa's date - the army went to capture Henry. And the army have locked Jaffa and I up as bait...

JAFFA

(whispers; to Suzie) Mumma... We have to save Henry... Who knows what they're doing to him?

SUZIE

(whispers; to Edith) Why is the army after Henry? Why?

EDITH

(whispers; to Edith) Long story...

JAFFA

(whispers to Suzie) Mumma. Please... Please try to find some sort of button on our cells... or on the walls; that activate the cell bars to open... Please...

(Suzie listens to her daughter; and locates a button on each cell; with the words titled "Release." Suzie presses the button on each cell; the cell doors open - Edith and Jaffa are free. Suzie cries as she hugs her daughter in her arms)

SUZIE

(whispers; to Jaffa) Oh Jaffa. Jaffa Darling...

JAFFA

(whispers; to Suzie) Mumma. I have to save Henry... I have to save him...

EDITH

(whispers; to Jaffa) I'm coming with you...

JAFFA

(whispers; to Edith) It'll be too dangerous Edith. I'm sure Henry doesn't want both of us killed or captured again.

EDITH

(whispers; to Jaffa) He doesn't want his girlfriend killed...

JAFFA

(whispers; to Henry) Please Edith... Please... I'll be fine... Have faith...

EDITH

(whispers; to Jaffa) Okay... Okay... Be careful... and save my grandson...

(Edith cries as she hugs Jaffa in her arms. Jaffa exits the cell doors. Edith and Suzie look at each other)

SUZIE

(whispers; to Edith) Oh Jaffa. Why... Why does she do this? She's going to get herself in danger...

EDITH

(whispers; to Suzie) Young Love...

INT. TAYLOR ARMY BASE - HALLWAY OF LOCK-UPS

(Escaped from her cell, Jaffa ensures she stays out of sight; crouching her way to Henry's lock-up cell. Jaffa can hear Henry struggle and scream as he tries to break free from his chains; Henry screams in frustration)

JAFFA

(whispers to herself) I'm coming Henry... I'm coming...

(Jaffa finally makes her way to the special lock-up cell where Henry is chained inside. Jaffa notices Henry struggling from afar, and worries. About to cross to Henry's cell - Jaffa is on the lookout for army soldiers crossing the hallway - two army soldiers cross; Jaffa crosses towards Henry's lock-up cell. Henry looks up and notices Jaffa; relieved she is saving him)

HENRY

(loudly relieved; to Jaffa) Jaffa...
Jaffa... You... How... How did you get out??

JAFFA

(whispers; to Henry) Henry... Henry.
Quiet...

(Henry listens to Jaffa, and remains quiet; ensuring he no longer remains heard. Jaffa finds the "Release" button on Henry's cell and presses it; Jaffa enters Henry's lock-up cell. Henry is thankful of Jaffa saving him)

HENRY

(whispers; to Jaffa) Jaffa... Jaffa.. You saved me... Thank you...

JAFFA

(whispers; to Henry) Not yet I haven't.

(Henry smiles. Jaffa bends down and removes the heavy-duty chains off of Henry's legs and arms. Henry is glad he is free, and has red marks over his legs and arms from the chain wounds)

JAFFA

(whispers; to Henry) Now you're free...

(Henry looks up at Jaffa in love)

HENRY

(whispers; to Henry) Thank you... my love...

(Jaffa smiles by Henry's kind words. Jaffa watches as Henry stands up; and hugs her; with the chains left on the ground)

HENRY

(hugging Jaffa, whispers) Thank you... I...
I love you..

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) I love you to Honey... Let's go...

(Jaffa holds Henry's hand; as they exit the cell. Henry and Jaffa remain hidden; and be careful that they are not identified by any army personnel. Henry and Jaffa crouch down as they hear two army soldiers passing by the hallway. Henry and Jaffa look at each other as the two soldiers pass by)

JAFFA

(whispers to Henry) Now that... Now that was close...

(Henry smiles at Jaffa and nods his head in agreement. Henry and Jaffa crouch their way towards the lock-up cells where Edith and Suzie are located.

INT. TAYLOR ARMY BASE - LOCK-UP CELLS

(Henry and Jaffa enter the room - Edith notices her grandson is free; and is approaching her. Edith hugs Henry)

EDITH

(hugging Henry, whispers) Oh Henry... Oh Henry...

HENRY

(hugging Edith, whispers) Grandma... Me missed you... and worried about you so much...

EDITH

(hugging Henry, whispers) I did to.

(Suzie hugs her daughter; relieved and happy Jaffa released Henry from lock-up)

SUZIE

(hugging Jaffa, whispers) Oh Jaffa. I'm glad... I'm glad you're okay...

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother; and wipes his tears - out of relief he is free, and is able to see his grandmother once again)

EDITH

(whispers to Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

(Henry looks at Jaffa, and stands behind her - wanting her attention. Suzie stops hugging Jaffa; Jaffa turns her head and looks at Henry... Edith and Suzie watch as her grandson and her daughter hug each other in love)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry, whispers) Let's get out of here Henry... Before they catch...

(SUDDENLY - the Army Lieutenant arrives and aims an assault rifle at Henry's back from afar)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(shouts) FREEZE. EVERY GODDAMN PERSON IN THIS ROOM. FREEZE-

(Everyone freezes, Henry faces his girlfriend. Henry grows panicked; not wanting to be captured and separated from his grandmother and girlfriend again)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(shouts; to Henry) WHO LET YOU OUT?

JAFFA

(shouts; to Army Lieutenant) I DID.

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(shouts; to Jaffa) Oh... a young woman saves a young man this time...

(The Army Lieutenant laughs at himself; still having his assault rifle aimed at Henry's back from afar)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(shouts; to Jaffa) And you are interfering in army affairs, AREN'T YOU? I should have you locked up bloody too.

(The Army Lieutenant points at the 2nd Lieutenant to arrest Jaffa.)

The 2nd Lieutenant tries to grab Jaffa; Henry holds Jaffa tightly; refusing to let go of Jaffa. Jaffa instantly knows Henry is avoiding her capture; and separation from him)

2ND LIEUTENANT

(annoyed; to Henry) LET HER GO. RIGHT... NOW...

(Henry ignores the commands of the 2nd Lieutenant. The 2nd Lieutenant shoots Henry's foot; Henry screams in agony. Edith and Suzie frantically cry as they watch on)

EDITH

(to Army Lieutenant) Please sir... Please don't do this... My grandson just wants to live a happy, peaceful life...

(The Army Lieutenant laughs to himself)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(to Edith) A peaceful life.... after what he has done... No way in HELL...

(The Army Lieutenant shoots at Henry's foot once again; Henry groans. Edith and Suzie continue to frantically cry at the situation. The 2nd Lieutenant continues to try to arrest Jaffa; he fails as Henry prohibits him from doing so)

JAFFA

(whispers to Henry) Henry... Henry... Your foot...

(Henry groans)

HENRY

(groans to Jaffa) It's okay. It's... I won't let them take you from me... Not at all...

(Another two soldiers help the 2nd Lieutenant, grab Jaffa off of Henry's arms. The two soldiers succeed and handle Jaffa - Henry screams at sight in anger; and tries to take Jaffa off of them. The 2nd Lieutenant shoots Henry in the shoulder; Henry screams in agony.

Henry doesn't give up; the two soldiers make their way with Jaffa to the lock-up cells; Henry sees this and ignites his hands in flames - Henry shoots a bolt of fire from his hands to the two soldiers' feet; pushing them down with the wind of his ability. The two soldiers' groan from their wounds; the 2nd Lieutenant shoots Henry in the shoulder again; Henry screams and shoots a bolt of fire from his hand to the 2nd Lieutenant's hand - burning it; then grabbing his arm; squeezing his arm; then burning his arm. The 2nd Lieutenant groans and falls down. The Army Lieutenant grabs Jaffa by the neck and chokeholds her; Jaffa struggles. Henry glares in flames; and looks at Jaffa; Suzie frantically cries over the fear of her daughter's potential chokehold death)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(angrily; to Henry) I'LL CHOKE HER LIKE YOU DID TO ME SHIRTLESS-

(Jaffa screams as she struggles to breathe with the Army Lieutenant's hand at her neck. Henry glares at the Army Lieutenant and attacks him - pushing him to the ground. Jaffa is free; and stands away from the brawl in between the Army Lieutenant and Henry. Henry throws massive punches at the Army Lieutenant's face; and punches him continuously with his fist - the Army Lieutenant groans at his arm wound from the day before; and punches Henry's jaw. The Army Lieutenant tries to shoot Henry again with a broken arm but struggles; Henry headbutts the Army Lieutenant - knocking him out indefinitely. Henry screams in frustration; and groans in pain. Suzie is shocked by the fearsome aggressiveness of her daughter's boyfriend)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Henry... Henry...

(Henry is very tense and very worked up; and ignores Edith. Jaffa looks at Edith; concerned about her boyfriend)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) Henry. It's okay...
It's okay... There's no more enemies... No
more...

(Henry cries to himself as he is
bent down; Jaffa bends down
towards Henry and comforts Henry)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) It's okay Henry... It's
okay...

HENRY

(tense; to Jaffa) Okay... Okay... Okay...

(Jaffa can tell Henry is very
tense; and continues to comfort
Henry)

HENRY

(tense; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Jaffa...

(Henry groans from his gunshot
wounds. Jaffa identifies Henry's
gunshot wounds on his shoulders;
Jaffa pats Henry on the back for
comfort. Henry cries and hugs
Jaffa)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

HENRY

(hugging Jaffa) I... I want to spend some
time with you tonight.. if that's okay...

(Jaffa stops hugging Henry; and
looks at him)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) Yes of course Henry... of
course...

(Henry stands up; and looks at his
grandmother; crying)

EDITH

(concerned; to Henry) Henry... It's okay...
It's okay... It's...

(Henry hugs his grandmother; Henry
groans from his gunshot wounds)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) You're hurt Henry. We've got
to get home and relieve those wounds. Fred
can...

JAFFA

(to Edith) I can help. I am training to be a doctor to...

(Henry stops hugging his grandmother; and looks at his girlfriend Jaffa)

EDITH

(to Jaffa) Well thanks Jaffa. Thanks... Henry and I both appreciate it...

JAFFA

(to Edith) No worries...

(Henry looks at Suzie; Suzie looks frightened of Henry after the fiery brawl he had with the Army Lieutenant and the 2nd Lieutenant. Henry notices Suzie's worry towards him; and looks back at Jaffa)

EDITH

(to Henry) Let's get home Henry. Let's go...

(Edith, Henry, Jaffa and Suzie head back to Fred's Farm Ranch Residence)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING ROOM

(Henry is laying on the five-seater green sofa; where Fred is instructing Jaffa on how to remove bullet wounds. Edith and Suzie, meanwhile are in the kitchen - Edith is cooking 'Potato & Ham Soup' for the night; Suzie watches Edith. Henry screams in agony; as Jaffa successfully removes the three bullet shrapnels from Henry's shoulders. Henry groans in pain)

EDITH

(cooking, to Henry) Be strong Henry... Be strong...

(Henry hears his grandmother voice and smiles)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) These bullet shrapnels have to come out...

FRED
(instructing Jaffa) Now the foot.

(Jaffa carefully extracts the bullet shrapnel from Henry's foot; Henry screams in the process from the agony. Henry breathes in agony, as the surgical procedure is complete. Henry looks at Jaffa, relieved of his wounds)

HENRY
(groans to Jaffa) Thank you... Jaffa...

JAFFA
(to Henry) No worries Henry... No worries at all... At least it's out... At least they're out...

(Henry smiles with relief)

EDITH
(to Edith) Good man Henry... You're a good strong man... I'm proud of you... Good on ya....

HENRY
(groans to Edith) Thanks Grandma... Thank you... (to Fred) And thanks Dad... for assisting Jaffa...

FRED
(to Henry) No worries son.

(Henry smiles as he is called "son" by his friend Fred. Jaffa watches as Henry carefully sits up; groaning in the process from his wounds. Henry has sat up; and now looks at Jaffa - holding her hand. Jaffa smiles. Minutes later; Edith has finished making dinner)

EDITH
(to everyone) Everyone... Dinner is served...

(Henry smiles as he sits at the dining table beside his girlfriend. Edith, Fred and Suzie make sit at the dining table minutes later. Moments later; everyone begins eating their meals)

FRED
(eating; to Edith) Goddamn Delicious Edith...

EDITH
 (annoyed; to Fred) Don't use the Lord's name
 in vain please...

HENRY
 (jokes with Fred) Yeah Dad... Grandma
 doesn't like it...

FRED
 (chuckles; to Henry) Righto son... Righto...

(Henry and Fred chuckle)

EDITH
 (smiles; to everyone) Well let's all pray.

(Edith begins her dinner prayer
 with all attendees at the dining
 table; bowing their heads)

EDITH
 (praying) Lord Heaven Father... the mighty
 Lord Jesus. We all thank you for the dinner
 you have served us tonight; I thank you for
 keeping Jaffa safe when she was saving my
 grandson Henry...

(Henry looks at Jaffa. Jaffa
 smiles at Henry)

EDITH
 (praying) I thank you for all that you have
 done for us all; and for all the things you
 will continue to do for us in the future. In
 your son's name - AMEN.

EVERYONE
 (says) AMEN.

(Everyone begins eating their
 meals. Jaffa thoroughly enjoys her
 meal, so does Henry, and Suzie)

JAFFA
 (eating; to Edith) This is so delicious
 Edith... Is this where Beth got her famous
 cooking from?

(Henry smiles as he watches Edith
 and Jaffa talk to each other)

EDITH
 (chuckles; to Jaffa) No Beth was... Beth was
 unique. Different. Unlike any chef I have
 ever had a meal from...

(Henry smiles)

SUZIE

(to Edith) Beth was more than a chef... she was a friend. Always looked out for me in school whenever I got bullied. She was the best person ever...

HENRY

(to everyone) She was the best MUM ever... She was the BEST...

EDITH

(to everyone) And the best daughter...

FRED

(to everyone) And the best crush...

(Everyone smiles as they remember Beth in their personal and friendly relationships. Moments later; everyone finishes their meals. Henry burps loudly; everyone chuckles)

HENRY

(chuckles, to everyone) Excuse me...

(Jaffa chuckles at Henry)

EDITH

(chuckles, to everyone) I must cook the best meals... honestly. Henry burps after every one I make...

(Everyone chuckles)

HENRY

(chuckles; to Edith) But Grandma... you're a really good cook. You really are...

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Edith) Actually... Henry burped on our date to...

(Henry burps again loudly)

FRED

(jokes with Henry) Damn you're a pig son...

(Henry chuckles)

EDITH

(to Henry) I mean... if you love your meals Henry... I don't care how much you burp...

(Henry smiles at his grandmother. Moments later - Edith starts cleaning up; and washes the dishes. Henry stands up)

HENRY

(to Edith) Grandma... Jaffa and I are going to spend some time together...

(Jaffa smiles)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Righto... We'll all let you both be...

(Henry smiles. Jaffa stands up)

SUZIE

(to Jaffa) I guess I'll see you tomorrow morning then Jaffa.

(Jaffa nods her head at her mother; acknowledging her comment. Henry and Jaffa hold hands, as they head to Henry's reserved room at Fred's Farm Ranch Residence)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S RESERVED ROOM

(Henry walks Jaffa to his reserved bedroom. Henry hugs Jaffa and kisses her on the lips. Jaffa smiles)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) You all good?

HENRY

(hugging Jaffa) Yeah... I'm all good...

(Jaffa stops hugging Henry. They share a passionate kiss on the lips)

JAFFA

(to Henry) It's all good...

(Jaffa lays down on Henry's haybed. Henry smiles; and hops on the haybed - kneeling downwards towards Jaffa, kissing her on the lips passionately. Jaffa holds Henry's arms as they both kiss each other)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) I love you my handsome man....

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) I love you to... My beautiful Jaffa-

(Henry continues to kiss Jaffa on the lips with passion on the haybed. Moments later; Henry lays down beside Jaffa)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Well that... that was good...

(Henry and Jaffa laugh at each other in love)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Thank you... Thank you for saving me from those... from those chains...

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) No worries, my man...

(Henry and Jaffa lean on the side on the haybed; and kiss each other passionately on the lips)

HENRY

(kissing Jaffa) Me love you... Me love you...

JAFFA

(kissing Henry) I love you to Henry... I love you to-

(Henry smiles at Jaffa; and they kiss once more. Jaffa holds Henry's hand; Henry smiles)

JAFFA

(to Henry) So uh... your grandma and I were talking about your ability when we were all locked up...

(Henry is interested in the conversation Jaffa had with his grandmother)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Yeah....

JAFFA

(to Henry) Your grandma was a big help for you when you were growing up with your ability...

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Yes she was... She really was...

JAFFA

(to Henry) She said you and her both have it under control; except for the incidents you've had with it. Like at your mum's Diner...

(Henry starts thinking about the memory; it haunts him)

HENRY

(saddened; to Henry) It was... It was a bad night that night...

JAFFA

(to Henry) Who did you hurt that night?

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Fred, the... the bartender at the Diner... and... and Grandma...

(Henry gets upset when talking about the incident. Jaffa sympathises with Henry)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) Hey... It wasn't your fault... It's okay...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) It was... bad... that night...

JAFFA

(to Henry) It's the past. You can't change the past... but you can move on...

HENRY

(to Jaffa) You're right... You're right.

(Moments later; Henry and Jaffa fall asleep to each other on the haybed. IT IS THE NEXT MORNING - Henry wakes up; and looks at Jaffa; and smiles. The sun blares inside the barn-room window; Henry watches over Jaffa. Jaffa wakes up minutes later from the sunlight; and notices Henry by her side)

JAFFA

(smiles to Henry) Well hello there.

(Henry smiles and kisses Jaffa on the lips. Jaffa smiles)

JAFFA
(smiles to Henry) Thanks for that morning kiss...

HENRY
(in love; to Jaffa) No worries. I'd do it another thousand times..

(Henry continues kissing Jaffa on the haybed. Henry and Jaffa hear Edith's voice at the dining room table; preparing oats for brekky)

JAFFA
(to Henry) We should say Hi... Let's go see your Grandma...

HENRY
(to Jaffa) Agreed... Let's go.

(Henry helps Jaffa off the haybed)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE

(They head to the dining room where Edith is prepping breakfast - for herself, Fred, Suzie, Jaffa and Henry. Edith and Suzie notice Henry and Jaffa)

EDITH
(smiles; to Henry & Jaffa) Well hello you two... How was your night?

SUZIE
(smiles; to Jaffa) Hello there Jaffa.

JAFFA
(smiles; to Suzie) Hello there Mumma...

HENRY
(smiles; to Edith) Good Grandma...

EDITH
(smiles; to Henry) Well that's good Henry... That's really good..

JAFFA
(smiles; to Edith) It was really good Edith...

EDITH
(smiles; to Jaffa) That's good. Brekky is ready for us all...

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Edith) Thanks Edith...

HENRY
 (smiles; to Edith) Thanks Grandma-

(Henry, Edith, Fred, and Suzie sit at the dining room table minutes later - and receive their breakfast of 'oatmeal with raspberries and maple syrup.' Everyone begins eating their breakfast. Fred enjoys his oatmeal)

FRED
 (eating; to Edith) Well you're at it again Edith... You are at it again...

EDITH
 (smiles; to Fred) You love your oatmeal do you?

FRED
 (eating; to Edith) Yes... I bloody do... So good...

SUZIE
 (eating; to Edith) It really is good Edith... Damn it's good...

HENRY
 (eating; to Edith) Good to Grandma.. So bloody good...

JAFFA
 (eating; to Edith) Yummy... I love the raspberries with the oats, and the maple syrup. So tasty and delicious...

EDITH
 (smiles; to all) Well thank you all. You are all to kind...

(Henry finishes his meal first; minutes later - and burps loudly. Henry chuckles)

HENRY
 (chuckles; to everyone) Sorry everyone... I am such a pig...

FRED
 (jokes; to Henry) Yeah you are son... You bloody are...

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) You're at it again
Henry... At it again...

JAFFA

(smiles; to everyone) At least he loves his
meals... That's what counts...

EDITH

(smiles; to Jaffa) That's right...

(Henry smiles. Everyone finishes
minutes later. Henry stands up;
wanting to show Jaffa something in
his room)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Jaffa... I uh... I wanna show you
something... Can you come here for a
second???

(Edith knows what Henry is up to.
Jaffa stands up)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Sure thing Henry... Sure thing...
Let's go...

(Edith smiles. Suzie notices
Edith's smiles; and is curious to
wonder what Edith is smiling at)

EDITH

(smiles to Suzie) Oh it's nothing...
Nevermind... I'm just happy to see my
grandson in love.. that's all...

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S
RESERVED ROOM

(Henry walks Jaffa by his room
again. He closes the door after
Jaffa)

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) I wanted to do this, this
morning... But I forgot... Um... Please...
Please... Close your eyes...

(Jaffa closes her eyes and smiles. Henry excitedly pulls a ring box from his bedside drawer. He opens the box and notices the gold-sparking ring. Henry kneels on his knee, and smiles as he looks at Jaffa)

HENRY
(smiles; to Jaffa) Open your eyes...

(Jaffa opens her eyes, and notices Henry is proposing to her to get married)

HENRY
(smiles; to Jaffa) Will you uh... Will you marry me??

(Jaffa grows excited by the proposal and agrees)

JAFFA
(excitedly; to Henry) Yes... Yes... of course... Of course...

(Jaffa and Henry scream at excitement; and hug each other. Henry refuses to let go)

JAFFA
(hugging Henry) Yes I will Henry... I will-

HENRY
(hugging Jaffa) Thank... Thank you... We have to discuss wedding plans... The day we're going to have it... everything....

JAFFA
(hugging Henry) I'm getting excited; thinking about it-

(Jaffa stops hugging Henry and kisses him on the lips. Henry and Jaffa share another passionate kiss)

JAFFA
(smiles; to Henry) Let me go tell Mumma... Come on...

(Henry smiles and follows Jaffa back to the dining room - as she breaks the news that she is engaged)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING ROOM

Made in Highland

(Henry and Jaffa return to the dining room table. Jaffa and Henry stand beside each other at the front of the table; and both smile. Edith knows why)

JAFFA

(smiles; to everyone) Okay everyone... I've got an announcement to make... I am happily engaged...

(Suzie & Edith scream in excitement. Suzie couldn't be more than happier)

SUZIE

(excited; to Jaffa) Oh Jaffa... That is beautiful... That is so beautiful...

(Suzie makes her way to Jaffa; and hugs her tightly)

SUZIE

(excited; to Jaffa) Oh Jaffa. I couldn't be happier. Wedding plans, wedding environments. We have much to discuss...

JAFFA

(excited; to Suzie) I know Mumma...

(Henry smiles as he walks towards his grandmother)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Good on you Henry... You're engaged...

HENRY

(smiles; to Edith) Thank you for helping me pick out the ring...

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) No...no worries...

(Henry hugs Edith tightly)

EDITH

(hugging Henry) If only your mother was here to see this... she would've loved to see this...

HENRY

(hugging Edith) I know... I miss her to... I wish she was here to see my girlfriend; and tell me lady advice...

EDITH

(hugging Henry) I know...

(Edith stops hugging Henry minutes later)

EDITH
(smiles; to Henry) Well it looks like you and Henry got some planning to do...

HENRY
(smiles; to Edith) Yeah....

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S RESERVED ROOM

(FIVE WEEKS LATER - It is the wedding day of Henry and Jaffa. Jaffa is dressed in a floral purple wedding dress; with purple sandals - Suzie helps her daughter get ready for the wedding. Henry is dressed in a green tuxedo suit; with black formal boots; Edith is standing by Henry's side; they begin talking)

EDITH
(smiles; to Henry) Well today is your big wedding day, ain't it?

(Henry smiles at his grandmother)

HENRY
(questions Edith) Grandma... Grandma... do I look nice??? Do I???

(Edith looks at Henry's formal attire and wedding tuxedo suit. Edith smiles at Henry)

EDITH
(to Edith) Yes Henry... You look handsome... Jaffa is going to think you look handsome...

(Fred notices Henry in his wedding attire, and is impressed)

FRED
(to Henry) Well son... That tux of yours looks good. So good...

HENRY
(to Fred) Thanks Dad...

(Edith hugs Henry tightly; and cries with happiness)

EDITH
(cries; hugging Henry) Well Henry... You've got a new life about to start... I'm so happy...

Made in Highland

HENRY

(cries; hugging Edith) I love you Grandma...
I always have... and always will... Thank
you for raising me to be the person I am
today...

EDITH

(cries; hugging Henry) Make sure you visit
me and that...

HENRY

(cries; hugging Edith) I will... I will...

PART 3 ENDS.

PART 4##

INT. TAYLOR STREET PARK

(The wedding between Henry and
Jaffa begins. Due to Jaffa's
deceased father as a young child;
Suzie walks her daughter down the
aisle. Henry smiles as he sees his
wife-to-be walk down the aisle in
the beautiful purple floral dress;
Jaffa smiles at Henry. Edith
smiles as she watches her grandson
get married to his love; Jaffa
approaches Henry and holds his
hands; Henry smiles at her. Fred
is the "marriage officiant" and
begins the wedding ceremony)

FRED

(to Henry & Jaffa) Righto... Are we ready??
Let's begin...

(Henry and Jaffa smile at each
other; and nod their heads -
signifying to Fred they are
ready...)

FRED

(to Henry) Now I'll start with the promises
- "Henry, do you promise to respect, admire
and appreciate Jaffa for who she is, as well
as the husband you wish to become?"

HENRY

(nods head; looks at Jaffa) I do...

FRED

(to Jaffa) "Jaffa, do you promise to
respect, admire and appreciate Henry for who
he is, as well as the wife you wish to
become?"

JAFFA
 (nods head; looks at Henry) Yes... I do....

(Henry and Jaffa smile in love)

FRED
 (to Henry) "Henry, do you promise to be there for Jaffa for when she needs you, whenever she needs you?"

HENRY
 (nods head; looks at Jaffa) Yes..

FRED
 (to Jaffa) "Jaffa, do you promise to be there for Henry for when he needs you, whenever he needs you?"

JAFFA
 (nods head; looks at Henry) Yes... Yes I do.

FRED
 (to Henry) "Henry, do you promise keep your life and Jaffa's life adventurous, full of passion and exciting?"

HENRY
 (nods head; looks at Jaffa) Yes... Yes I do...

FRED
 (to Jaffa) "Jaffa, do you promise to keep your life and Henry's life adventurous, full of passion and exciting?"

JAFFA
 (nods head; looks at Henry) Yes...

(A pause. Fred pulls out one of the silver wedding rings; and hands it to Henry)

FRED
 (to Henry) Take this ring... and put it on Jaffa's wedding finger...

(Henry takes the silver wedding ring from Fred's hand; and places the ring on Jaffa's wedding finger)

FRED
 (to Henry) Repeat after me Henry - "I give you Jaffa, this ring. To wear it with joy and love. As this ring has no end in near. Neither shall my love for you at all. And with this ring, I choose you to be my wife forever and always."

HENRY

(to Jaffa) "I give you Jaffa, this ring. To wear it with joy and love. As this ring has no end in near. Neither shall my love for you at all. And with this ring, I choose you to be my wife forever and always."

(Jaffa smiles at Henry. Fred pulls out the other silver wedding ring; and hands it to Jaffa. Jaffa places the ring on Henry's wedding finger)

FRED

(to Jaffa) Repeat after me Jaffa - "I give you Henry, this ring. To wear it with joy and love. As this ring has no end in near. Neither shall my love for you at all. And with this ring, I choose you to be my husband forever and always."

JAFFA

(to Henry) "I give you Henry, this ring. To wear it with joy and love. As this ring has no end in near. Neither shall my love for you at all. And with this ring, I choose you to be my husband forever and always."

(Henry smiles)

FRED

(to Jaffa & Henry) And I now pronounce to you both... Husband and Wife... (to Henry) You may kiss the bride...

(Henry and Edith share a passionate kiss on the lips. Suzie and Edith smile and applause; so does Fred)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Well that's it... we are both Husband and Wife...

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) Yes... I am now your husband... and you are now my wife...

(Jaffa and Henry share another passionate kiss. 15 mins later - all attendees; Henry & Jaffa, start eating slices of the red velvet wedding cake. Henry smiles as he holds his wife's hand with love; Jaffa smiles at Henry)

SUZIE

(to Jaffa) So Jaffa..
(MORE)

SUZIE (CONT'D)

Where is your husband taking you on your honeymoon?

(Jaffa smiles as she looks at Henry; then looks back at Suzie)

JAFFA

(to Suzie) Well we're heading to Taylor River. There's a motel by the river called Taylor River Motel (looks at Henry) I'm getting excited thinking about it already...

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) Yeah... I am to... I am to...

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry & Jaffa) You make sure you both have a great time eh?

HENRY

(smiles; to Edith) I will. I'll look after my wife..

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry) Now that's a good husband...

(Henry smiles to Edith. HOURS PASS - it is 5pm. Henry and Jaffa prepare for their honeymoon, and hop into their wedding limo with their packed bags. Edith and Suzie stand by the car window)

EDITH

(smiles; to Henry & Jaffa) Have fun... you two. This will be the most memorable times of marriage life... Have fun...

HENRY

(smiles; to Edith) We will...

SUZIE

(smiles; to Jaffa) Have fun beautiful...

JAFFA

(smiles; to Suzie) I will...

(Moments later; Henry and Jaffa are off in their limo; and say goodbye to Edith and Suzie. They make their way to their honeymoon location)

INT. TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL - OUTSIDE

Made in Highland

(They arrive at the location of the honeymoon)

LIMO DRIVER

(to Henry & Edith) Well here we are newlyweds... Off you go...

(Henry hops out of the car with the packed bags, and closes the door. Henry makes his way to Jaffa's car window, opens the door, helps Jaffa out by the hand, and closes the car door)

HENRY

(to Limo Driver) Thank... Thank-

(The rude limo driver drives off in a hurry)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Well he was rude, wasn't he?

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Yes... he was... He was...

JAFFA

(to Henry) Oh well.. Let's not let him ruin our honeymoon-

(Henry smiles at Jaffa; as they make their way to the reception of Taylor River Motel. They arrive at Reception; the receptionist directs Henry and Jaffa to Motel Number 6)

INT. TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL - MOTEL NUMBER 6

(They arrive at their motel; Henry puts the packed bags on the motel room's floor)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Righto... Shall the honeymoon begin...

(Henry smiles and closes the door. Jaffa and Henry smile at each other; as they get close. Henry and Jaffa kiss each other on the lips whilst standing; then fall to their motel bed.

Jaffa begins taking Henry's front tuxedo off slowly; as they passionately kiss on the bed; making Henry shirtless. Jaffa holds Henry's arms as he kisses her romantically)

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) I love you Jaffa... I love you so much... There's no other person I wanna be with...

(Henry and Jaffa continue kissing each other on the motel bed)

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) I'm glad I found you...

(Jaffa smiles at Henry. 15 minutes later - Henry changes into his swimsuit - shirtless; red trunks; barefoot. He waits by his new wife Jaffa at the motel room door; Jaffa changes into a red tankini; barefoot. She walks up to her new husband; they share a hug)

JAFFA

(in love; hugging Henry) Hey... My handsome husband...

(Henry smiles and continues hugging Jaffa)

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) Hey... My pretty wife...

(Henry smiles and continues hugging Jaffa)

JAFFA

(in love; hugging Henry) You ready to go swimming babe...

(Henry likes being called "babe" and smiles at Jaffa. Henry stops hugging Jaffa minutes later)

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) Yes I am--

JAFFA

(In love; to Jaffa) Let's go then...

(Henry decides to pick up Jaffa; they giggle at each other with the love they feel between each other)

 INT. TAYLOR RIVER BY TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL

(Henry carries his new wife down to his favourite swimming hole by Taylor River; which is directly next to Taylor River Motel. Henry arrives by foot at his favourite swimming hole and continues to carry Jaffa; Jaffa smiles in Henry's arms; and looks at the flowing river)

JAFFA

(smiles; carried by Henry) So this is your favourite swimming hole Henry...

HENRY

(in love; carrying Jaffa) Yes... it is... I love it here...

(Jaffa looks at the flowing Taylor River once again)

JAFFA

(smiles; carried by Henry) Well it does look pretty... and peaceful-

(Henry smiles at Jaffa whilst holding her; and puts his head downwards towards Jaffa's chest; Jaffa strokes Henry's hair)

JAFFA

(stroking Henry's hair; carried by Henry) You all good...

HENRY

(in love; carrying Jaffa) Yeah I'm... I just... I really love you so much...

JAFFA

(stroking Henry's hair; carried by Henry) Oh I love you to Henry... and I will always love you... Now what are we waiting for - let's head for a swim-

(Henry smiles as he grows excited for the swim and puts down Jaffa. Jaffa smiles at her shirtless husband; they hold hands and look at each other; and enter the river - and start swimming. Jaffa dog paddles along the river; Henry smiles whilst looking at her)

JAFFA

(dog paddling) Oh Henry... The river is so nice... and cool...

(Henry swims closer to Jaffa by arm strokes)

HENRY

(swimming) It is Jaffa... It's beautiful... I love the sound of nature to...

JAFFA

(dog paddling) It's the perfect place to relax-

(Jaffa swims up to Henry's arms. Henry holds her in the river and smiles)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Hey...

(Jaffa and Henry kiss romantically in the river; on the lips for 5 mins straight. They look at each other; and smile in the river)

JAFFA

(chuckling; to Henry) Kissing is even better in the river... Come chase me...

(Henry smiles and grows excited by the chase. Jaffa swims freestyle as fast as she can from Henry. Henry dives under the river waters; and notices Jaffa's legs underwater. He holds his breath; swims fast underwater; grabs Jaffa's legs. Jaffa smiles above water; as she identifies Henry has caught her underwater. Henry smiles underwater; as he grabs Jaffa's legs underwater and pushes Jaffa a far distance away. Jaffa laughs as she is thrown to the side; Henry lifts his head above water and chuckles with Jaffa)

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Henry) Hey Mister... Now that was not very nice... Ha-ha--

(Jaffa splashes water towards Henry's face. Henry laughs as his face gets drenched; Henry splashes heavy water towards Jaffa's face; Jaffa laughs as her face gets drenched)

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Henry) You are so naughty....
my husband....

(Henry chuckles and swims closer to Jaffa - and holds her in his arms)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Now that was fun, ain't it...

HENRY

(in love; to Henry) So fun. So damn fun...

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Yes... Yes it was...
(chuckles) It was funny. It felt like you were a shark underwater grabbing my legs...

(Henry chuckles)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Goodness you are one funny man...

(Henry kisses Jaffa on the lips whilst holding her in the water)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) You're becoming a better kisser each and every day...

(Henry chuckles)

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) Yeah I uh...

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) You're what??

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) I am so... so in love with you...

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) I am to...

(Henry goes into a romantic spree; and carries her out of the river water, to ashore - both Henry and Jaffa are completely drenched. Henry lays Jaffa down; and kisses her bending downwards to her. Jaffa smiles and holds Henry's arms whilst Henry kisses her)

JAFFA

(kissing Henry) Keep... Keep going...

(Henry smiles as he continues kissing Jaffa)

HENRY

(kissing Jaffa) I don't... I don't... want... to... stop...

(Jaffa smiles as they both continue kissing one another)

JAFFA

(kissing Henry) Who said?? Who said you had to?

(Henry smiles as Jaffa and Henry continue to romantically kiss each other... Henry stops moments later and lays to the side on the ground where Jaffa is)

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Henry) Well that was..

(Henry and Jaffa chuckle)

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Henry) That was even better than the first time I met you...

(Henry kisses Jaffa on the lips once again; leaning to the side. Jaffa smiles)

JAFFA

(kissing Henry) Good man... Good...

(Henry smiles in love; and stops kissing Jaffa; and looks at her - leaning to the side. Jaffa puts her palm on Henry's barechest; feeling his heartbeat)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Now that heart...

(Henry holds Jaffa's hand on his chest. Henry's heartbeat is beating heavy out of the intense love he feels for her)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Well that heart is beating fast... out of love for me...

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) That's right...

(Henry holds Jaffa's hand and smiles)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Romantic...

(Henry and Jaffa share a passionate kiss. Henry continues holding Jaffa's hand)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Well you know what... one of my ultimate romantic things to do with you in our life; is a romantic campfire in the middle of nowhere-

(Henry smiles; but fears of the thought of using his ability. Jaffa notices Henry's fear)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) Hey... what's wrong?

(Henry shakes his head)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Oh nothing... nothing... nothing... It's just...

(Jaffa holds her hand at Henry's chest)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) No something is wrong... you're scared of your ability aren't you?

(Henry nods his head)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I've... I've uh hurt people with it Jaffa... I-

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) Out of accidents Henry... Never intentional...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) It's just... The Beth's Diner incident - I was miserable for weeks when I hurt my grandma... I wanted to... I wanted to die...

(Jaffa feels saddened by Henry's desire to die; after the incident at Beth's Diner)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Henry... No... No... Never ever think that... ever.. It was an accident. It wasn't your fault-

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) Jaffa... I broke Grandma's leg... and I burnt her arm... if it wasn't for Fred that night... I would have killed her...

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) But Henry... again... It was not your fault... You're a good man with good intentions Henry. That was not you. Someone drugged you that night...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I know... And thank you...

JAFFA

(smiles at Henry) Like the vow I made at our wedding - "I promised that I will be there for you whenever you need be." And I will keep that vow because I love you and you are my husband-

(Henry is touched by Jaffa's words. Another kissing spree ashore begins; Jaffa holds Henry's arms as Henry kisses her for another 5 mins straight. Henry stops and looks at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(smiles at Henry) Let's head inside Mister-

(Henry smiles and nods his head. Henry stands up; and carries Jaffa back to their motel)

INT. TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL - MOTEL NUMBER 6

(They arrive back at the motel.)

Made in Highland

Jaffa changes into her sleepwear - pink pyjama set; barefoot. Henry changes into his green boxers; still shirtless and barefoot. Jaffa hops into bed and lays down)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Well that was good Henry... That was nice-

(Henry crawls towards Jaffa on the motel bed; and kisses her. Henry and Jaffa chuckle. Henry then hops under the blankets of the bed; and leans towards the side - looking at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) You're having a great-

(Henry's phone rings; Jaffa hears. Henry sits up on the bed; and fetches his phone from the bedside table next to the bed)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Who's that?

(Henry notices it is his grandmother's number ringing)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Grandma.. It's Grandma-

(Henry smiles at Jaffa; and answers the phone)

HENRY

(on phone) Hello Grandma...

EDITH

(on phone) Oh hello there Henry... How is your honeymoon?

(Henry holds Jaffa's hand and smiles at her)

HENRY

(on phone) Grandma... It's the best...

JAFFA

(whispers to Henry) Put it on loudspeaker-

(Henry puts his phone on loudspeaker)

EDITH

(on phone) As long as you're having a good time Henry... What about Jaffa? How's she doing?

JAFFA

(on phone) Oh Edith - I'm having a great time... Henry is such a good kisser-

(Edith chuckles. Henry smiles at Jaffa)

HENRY

(on phone) What about you Grandma?? How are you?? What are you up to??

EDITH

(on phone) Oh nothing really. Just watching the telly... as usual... Fred's cricket...

(Henry smiles at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(on phone) Oh my Mum loves the cricket to... Mum and Fred are cricket experts...

(Henry smiles at Jaffa once again)

EDITH

(on phone) Well I might let you both go... Have fun Henry... You too Jaffa...

JAFFA

(on phone) I will... Bye Edith...

HENRY

(on phone) Bye Grandma... I love you so much...

EDITH

(on phone) Me to Henry... Me to... Never forget it...

HENRY

(on phone) I won't. Bye...

EDITH

(on phone) Bye...

(Edith ends the phone call. Henry smiles at Jaffa; Jaffa notices Henry's smile)

JAFFA

(to Henry) She looks out for you... doesn't she?

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Yes... Grandma... Grandma is... very special to me...

JAFFA

(to Henry) Yeah I know... I can tell...

(Henry lays back down, under the blankets and kisses Jaffa. Jaffa and Henry smile at each other. Moments later - Henry and Jaffa fall asleep next to each other on the motel bed)

INT. TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL - OUTSIDE

(THE NEXT MORNING - Vince tracks Henry's phone location to the motel; Bobby walks a paraplegic Vince in a wheelchair towards the entrance of the motel. Vince has identified through mobile communications that his son has gotten married, and is having his honeymoon at the location of the motel)

BOBBY

(to Vince) So uh... You were saying Henry has gotten married.

VINCE

(annoyed; to Bobby) Yep... And did not invite me at all. His own goddamn father...

BOBBY

(to Vince) It'll be good to meet your daughter-in-law wouldn't it?

VINCE

(annoyed; to Bobby) No... Another bitch to confuse my son... Too many bitches around my son... Too many women around my son... He needs more men around him...

BOBBY

(to Vince) Oh... You're right Captain...

VINCE

(annoyed; to Bobby) Right, here's the plan - since my son crippled me and practically burnt my chest - requiring me to get chest replacement surgery... you're going to attack from inside...

BOBBY

(to Vince) Okay Vince... But how?

VINCE

(to Bobby) There's a sniper in your backpack... Quick...

(Bobby takes his backpack off; and pulls out a sniper and hands it to Vince)

Made in Highland

VINCE

(handles sniper; to Bobby) Now there should be those needles I manufactured back at home inside the backpack...

(Bobby locates the bullet-like needles in the backpack and hands it to Vince. Vince inserts one of the needles in the sniper gun; and hands the gun back to Bobby)

VINCE

(to Bobby) And where's that handgun?

(Bobby searches the backpack for the handgun; and hands it to Vince. Vince ensures the handgun is loaded; and hands it back to Bobby)

BOBBY

(smiles; to Vince) Well Vince. I'm all armed up...

VINCE

(annoyed; to Bobby) Well off you go.

INT. TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL - MOTEL NUMBER 6

(Henry wakes up from the sun blaring from the window into his eyes. Henry smiles; and turns to the side - looking at his wife Jaffa. Henry smiles as he watches over her; in deep love and affection for her. Jaffa wakes up; her eyes open and she notices Henry. Henry smiles at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Well hello you....

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) Hello Jaffa... Hello... Babe-

(Henry sits up; and kisses Jaffa on the lips. Jaffa holds Henry's arms whilst Henry kisses her; Jaffa smiles)

JAFFA

(kissing Henry) This is how we start... each... morning...

HENRY

(kissing Jaffa) Yes-

Made in Highland

(MOMENTS LATER - Bobby barges inside the motel. This startles Jaffa; Henry glares at Bobby - and is annoyed to see him again)

JAFFA
(frantic; to Bobby) MY GOD. WHO THE HELL ARE YOU?

(Bobby smiles and chuckles at Jaffa)

BOBBY
(sadistic; to Henry) Hey Shirtless...

HENRY
(annoyed; to Bobby) GET OUT.

BOBBY
(sadistic; to Henry) How about no?

(Bobby with the handgun, shoots the wall beside Henry. Jaffa frantically cries; Henry covers her with his body)

BOBBY
(sadistic; to Henry) You're gonna light up today boy... You're burning bright today...

JAFFA
(frantic to Henry) Who is that?

HENRY
(worried; to Jaffa) Bad people... They're... Jaffa. I need you to run... away... back home...

(Jaffa is concerned and confused; as to why Henry wants her to leave him)

HENRY
(whispers; to Jaffa) I don't know what's gonna happen but I don't want to hurt you if I lose control... Please understand... Plea-

(Bobby with the sniper; shoots Henry on the waist; Henry screams in agony; Jaffa notices the sharp needle on Henry's waist. Jaffa worries)

JAFFA
(frantic; to Bobby) WHAT DID YOU DO TO MY HUSBAND?

VINCE

(smiles; to Jaffa) Embracing who he is. See who your real husband is like...

(Henry feels excruciating pain from the needle; and pulls it out. Henry panics and wishes Jaffa to leave; in the case of an accidental fireburst)

HENRY

(scared; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Run.. Run... Run....

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) No I will never leave you my husband... Never.. We stick together like husband and wife...

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) I know but please Jaffa. I'm gonna be dangerous... I can feel it...

(Jaffa notices Henry's chest turn red; and light up in flames. Henry looks down at his fiery barechest; and panics)

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) Please Jaffa. I'm beg... I'm begging you... Please-

(Jaffa agrees out of Henry's wishes and fears)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) Okay Henry...

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) Call Grandma... Call Grandma... please...

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) Okay....

(Henry's torso fully engulfs in flames. The fire alarms go off; Vince and Bobby laugh at Henry's loss of control. Jaffa runs out of the motel; and evacuates successfully. Outside the motel; Jaffa worries about her fiery husband. Vince in his wheelchair; laughs at his son's loss of control)

VINCE

(smiles; to Henry) Finally... Embrace who you are...

(A fiery Henry opens the window to plan of escape; trying to avoid as much damage and destruction to the motel as possible. Vince notices)

VINCE
(chuckles; to Bobby) Stop my son from escaping... Now...

(Bobby grabs Henry's arm; and tries to avoid his escape. A fiery Henry grunts in anger at Bobby; and grabs Bobby's arm - Bobby screams as he presses it hard; and burns it. Bobby screams in agony)

BOBBY
(screams; to Vince) HE. HE. BURNT ME--

(Henry angrily lets go of Bobby; and tries to avoid Henry's escape but fails. Henry jumps a small height to the ground; Henry looks at his fiery chest and hands; and makes an escape. Vince is unhappy his son has escaped)

VINCE
(annoyed; to Bobby) BOBBY. GET MY SON. SHOOT HIM. HE'S TRYING TO STOP HIS ABILITY. THAT AIN'T HAPPENING. GO AFER HIM NOW...

(Bobby groans from his burnt arm wound. Bobby picks the sniper and handgun up; and exits the motel. Bobby notices a fiery, shirtless Henry running away throughout the trees and forest surrounding the motel. Bobby laughs; and aims a sniper at Henry's arm; Bobby successfully shoots Henry in the arm. Henry screams as he falls down; and kneels down. A panicked Jaffa notices Bobby with the sniper; trying to shoot Henry again. Jaffa runs up to Bobby; and takes the sniper off of Bobby's hand. Bobby kicks Jaffa in the stomach; Jaffa groans; Henry notices)

HENRY
(groans; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Run... Run....

(Jaffa groans as she stands back up; and aims the sniper at Bobby)

JAFFA

(points sniper at Bobby) BOBBY. STOP....
STOP RIGHT NOW... LEAVE MY HUSBAND ALONE...

BOBBY

(laughs; to Jaffa) Ha... ha... A couple in
love... Alright...

(Vince notices Bobby being
overpowered by Jaffa)

VINCE

(shouts to Bobby) SHOOT HIM NOW-

(Vince exits the motel by the
wheelchair; and evacuates back to
his car - avoiding being seen.
Bobby shoots Henry in the chest
two times; Henry screams as his
heart struggles - and the bullet
attacks Henry's nervous system)

JAFFA

(frantic; to Henry) HENRY. HENRY-

(Henry groans and screams; and
senses the fire within his body be
exposed. Henry struggles to
conceal it; as his heart
struggles)

HENRY

(screams in fear; begging Jaffa) JAFFA.
Call... Call Grandma-

(Henry screams in fear)

JAFFA

(worried; to Jaffa) Okay... Okay...

HENRY

(groans; begs Jaffa) Now-

(An incredible, massive blaze from
Henry's chest is directed at the
trees; Jaffa exits out of the way
from the massive explosion - the
fire explosion burns the greenery,
plant life, and trees to the
ground - killing all plant life.
Jaffa is shocked of her husband's
powerful ability - and remains out
of the firing line outside the
motel; and contacts Edith in
emergency by phone; Edith answers
the phone)

EDITH

(on phone) Hello Jaffa. How are you?

JAFFA

(panicked; to Edith) Edith... Henry has... he's lost control... He told me to call you up for assistance... for you to assist him...

EDITH

(worried; to Jaffa) Oh no... Okay... I'll be there...

JAFFA

(cries; to Edith) I wanted to help him but he didn't want me to...

EDITH

(worried; to Jaffa) I'll be right there...

(Edith hangs the phone call up; and heads to Taylor River Motel. The motel goes into evacuation with fire alarms sounding off - the scared receptionist evacuates; and approaches Jaffa)

RECEPTIONIST

(scared; to Jaffa) Quick. Quick young lady... Out of the firing line... Now...

(The blaze completely destroys the motel; and demolishes it. The receptionist and Jaffa are shocked by the explosion - Henry's entire torso is in red, hot, powerful flames as he stands up among the blaze; and cries in fear - as he looks at the destruction he has caused. Henry's heart begins to give in; and falls to the ground. Henry's inflamed stomach burns the grass even more; burning a hole into the ground; Henry falls in and groans. Edith arrives at the scene; and approaches Jaffa - and the complete destruction of green life; the trees and the motel itself - done by his grandson)

EDITH

(concerned; to Jaffa) Oh no... Henry... (questions Jaffa) What happened?

JAFFA

(cries; to Edith) His father and his buddy... shot him... with some needle kind of thing... and then bullets... I wanted to help him so bad... I wanted to...

(The fire blaze hits the trees beside the motel; completely destroying and burning them... The blaze dies off minutes later - as Henry falls underground from the hole he burnt on the ground by the stomach)

EDITH

(concerned; to Jaffa) I know. I may have to teach you one day... Now... let me go search for Henry...

JAFFA

(concerned; to Edith) I will come to... He's going to need all the support he needs.

EDITH

(concerned; to Jaffa) Yes... He's going to be a wreck... and a bit tense... Now let's go...

(The receptionist notices Edith and Jaffa nearing the demolition of the motel; and questions their motives)

RECEPTIONIST

(shocked; to Jaffa & Edith) Eh... What are you doing?

(Jaffa lies to the Receptionist; to avoid questioning the situation and motives they hold)

JAFFA

(to Receptionist) Trying to find survivors...

RECEPTIONIST

(concerned; to Jaffa) Let the fire brigade do it... It's dangerous... Where is... Where is that man who was with you?

JAFFA

(to Receptionist) Please... We're going to find survivors. We've got to go...

(Edith and Jaffa leave in search of Henry. The receptionist is shocked)

RECEPTIONIST

(to Edith & Jaffa) Crazy two-

(The receptionist leaves in her unharmed car. Edith and Henry walk through the destroyed forest-life)

 INT. UNDERGROUND MINE

(MEANWHILE - Henry falls deeper into a hole underground he had burnt by his stomach. Henry groans as he hits the surface; Henry stands up; and holds his fiery stomach; avoiding any excess damage. A scared Henry looks around the underground mine; and holds his struggling heart as he walks his barefeet through the muddy underground mine. Henry cries in agony and fear; as he worries about Jaffa and his grandmother. Still heavily inflamed; Henry tries to breathe but struggles due to his struggling heart)

 INT. TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL - OUTSIDE

(Jaffa and Edith continue to walk through the dead-forest and continue searching for Henry)

JAFFA

(cries; to Edith) Henry... He's got to be somewhere...

EDITH

(worried; to Jaffa) He'll be here somewhere... He will. He'll just be hiding somewhere that we can not see...

JAFFA

(cries; to Edith) Either that... or he's run very far away... Poor Henry...

(Edith puts her hand on Jaffa's shoulder)

EDITH

(comforts Jaffa) Jaffa. We're going to find Henry... You and I... we are going to find Henry. My grandson... and your husband... We will save Henry....

(Jaffa smiles out of confidence; and continue on the search for Henry. Whilst walking - Jaffa notices a hole from a far distance)

JAFFA
(to Edith) What is that?

(Jaffa approaches the deep hole; Edith approaches Jaffa minutes later and notices the hole)

JAFFA
(worried; to Edith) Henry could have...
Could he have went in here?

(Edith thinks to herself; and agrees that Henry could have went in the deep, underground hole to escape; to prevent any fiery damage. Edith worries about Henry's state)

EDITH
(worried; to Jaffa) He could have... Henry must of... He must have been so scared to burn a hole underground...

JAFFA
(worried; to Edith) Or it could have been an accident...

EDITH
(worried; to Jaffa) Yeah true. Or he did it to avoid hurting anyone else or doing more destruction above ground...

JAFFA
(worried; to Edith) We've got to get down there... but there's no safety harness or rope I can see...

EDITH
(worried; to Jaffa) Goodness. It must have hurt Henry hitting flat surface... But yes... But my weight... Unless...

JAFFA
(worried; to Edith) Don't put yourself down Edith... You are the best grandmother I have ever come across. And the best grandmother-in-law... We can do it together...

(Henry smiles at Edith. They hold hands)

JAFFA

(worried; to Jaffa) Alright... Let me find something...

INT. UNDERGROUND MINE

(A severely injured, fiery Henry - walks along the hallways of the underground mine. Henry groans and cries from his pain; with one hand on his chest; Henry cries in fear and approaches a room in the underground mine. Henry enters an abandoned room underground by kicking it open - as his hands are still inflamed. Henry sits down against the wall; and holds his hand on his chest - as his heart struggles. Henry feels death is coming - and accepts it as he closes his eyes)

INT. TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL - OUTSIDE

(Whilst trying to find a way down - Jaffa notices a square-shaped door on the ground; metres away from where they are; and approaches it)

EDITH

(worried to Henry) What is it?? What do you see?

(Jaffa bends down and notices the square-shaped door... She opens the square-shaped door; and notices underground stairs as the entrance. Jaffa talks to Edith via the distance between them)

JAFFA

(to Edith) Edith.... I found... this must be the passageway to where Henry may be hiding... Right here-

(Edith approaches Jaffa; and notices the square-opened door passageway underground; with stairs as the entrance. Edith agrees with Jaffa; that this is where her grandson may be hiding)

EDITH
 (concerned; to Jaffa) Yes... Henry may be
 hiding in here... Let's go-

INT. UNDERGROUND MINE

(Jaffa helps Edith climb down the
 underground stairs; as they enter
 the underground mine. The
 underground mine is filthy and
 looks abandoned)

EDITH
 (to Jaffa) Thanks Jaffa... You're a great
 daughter-in-law; and even a better wife to
 my grandson...

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Edith) Thanks Edith...

(Edith and Jaffa look at the
 underground mine)

JAFFA
 (confident; to Edith) Henry must be here
 somewhere...

EDITH
 (to Jaffa) Um... Jaffa... Just remember...
 because of what has happened - Henry may not
 be in the mood to talk, and he may be VERY
 tense... What we need to do... is to help
 him relax, and help him get medical
 treatment.

JAFFA
 (nods head; to Edith) I understand.

EDITH
 (to Jaffa) Let's search for Henry...

(Edith and Jaffa search for Henry;
 as they walk along the hallway.
 Edith and Jaffa begin calling for
 Henry)

EDITH
 (calling) Henry... Henry... It's Grandma...
 It's Grandma...

(MEANWHILE, HENRY hears his
 grandmother and opens his eyes -
 relieved she has come to save him.
 Whilst walking; Edith hears the
 sound of footsteps)

EDITH
(calling) Henry... Is that... Is that you?

(Henry exits the room; heavily inflamed and dangerous; whilst holding his struggling heart. Edith and Jaffa notice a shadow of a fiery person)

EDITH
(concerned; to shadow) Henry... Is that you?

HENRY
(groans; to Edith) Yes... Grandma... it's me... It's... me...

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) It's okay... It's okay... Let's breathe together... Is there somewhere we can sit? Let's...

HENRY
(groans; to Edith) Grandma... Jaffa. Have you seen her? Have you?

EDITH
(smiles; to Henry) She's here... She's here with me Henry... She's okay...

(Henry is relieved)

HENRY
(groans; to Edith) Good...

JAFFA
(smiles; to Henry) I'm here Henry... I can't really see you, it's...

(Henry makes himself seen. Jaffa notices her fiery husband in flames; Edith notices her grandson up in flames. Henry approaches his grandmother and wife Jaffa from a distance; and falls to the ground as his heart struggles; Edith and Jaffa panic)

EDITH
(concerned; to Henry) Oh my goodness.... Henry.... Henry...

JAFFA
(concerned to Henry) Henry... Henry...

(Jaffa looks closer at her husband from a distance. Henry groans as he holds his hand on his heart; Henry coughs)

HENRY
(groans; to Edith) I uh.... I think I'm having... I think I'm having another heart attack... My heart is sore...

EDITH
(frantic; to Henry) Oh no... Oh no... I'm calling Fred ASAP...

(Edith calls Fred on her phone. It is too late; Henry collapses; Jaffa notices and panics)

JAFFA
(concerned; to Henry) Henry... Oh no... Henry...

(Edith cries as she frantically calls Fred. Fred is on his way; Edith ends the phone call. The flames dissipate off of Henry's body)

EDITH
(cries; to collapsed Henry) Oh no.. Oh no... Oh no...

(Jaffa cries as she bends down to her collapsed Henry)

EDITH
(cries; to Jaffa) Fred is coming... Fred is coming...

JAFFA
(cries; to Edith) Okay... Okay...

(Jaffa puts her hand on Henry's bare chest; and feels his struggling heartbeat beating; as he is unconscious)

JAFFA
(cries; to Edith) He's still breathing... His heart is just... His heart is struggling... (looks at Edith) Henry was right... He is having a heart attack-

EDITH
(cries to herself) Come on Fred... Come on...

JAFFA
(cries; to Edith) Henry... When he lost control - I wanted to help him so bad... I wanted to so bad... He wouldn't let me...

EDITH
 (cries; to Jaffa) I know... He's just
 extremely terrified of himself... of hurting
 others... like you and me...

 INT. TAYLOR RIVER MOTEL - OUTSIDE

(FRED arrives in the sedan above
 ground. He hops out of the car
 with his surgical utensils and
 first aid kit; and searches for
 Henry, Edith & Jaffa)

FRED
 (calling for Edith) Edith.... Edith...

(Edith and Jaffa can hear Fred's
 voice. Edith smiles at Jaffa at
 Fred's savoury; and approaches him
 from underground)

EDITH
 (shouting to Fred) Down here Fred... Down
 here.. Quick...

(Fred notices the square-shaped
 passageway from above-ground; and
 is shocked to see that Edith,
 Jaffa & Henry are underground from
 above-ground)

 INT. UNDERGROUND MINE

(Fred makes his way down the
 stairs; Edith approaches Fred;
 Edith notices a shocked, lost
 Fred)

EDITH
 (frantic; to Fred) Quick Fred... Quick...
 Quick...

(Fred follows Edith into the room
 where the collapsed Henry is; with
 Jaffa. Fred enters the room - and
 notices the shirtless; collapsed
 Henry on the ground; Jaffa notices
 Fred)

JAFFA
 (concerned; to Fred) Fred... I feel his
 heart... He's still breathing but is
 struggling...

FRED

(concerned; to Jaffa) Righto... Thanks Jaffa.... I'll attend to Henry now...

(Jaffa stands up; and gets out of the way and stands beside Edith. Edith and Jaffa hold hands; in hopes that Henry will make it. Fred bends down; and puts his heart on Henry's barechest - feeling his struggling heartbeat)

FRED

(to Jaffa) Well Jaffa... You are correct. Henry's heart is beating but is struggling-

(Fred performs CPR on Henry's heart; Henry's heart drops nearing death; Fred panics)

FRED

(concerned; to Edith) Oh goodness... His heart is really dropping. Like never before...

(Fred continues performing CPR on Henry's chest. Henry is not recovering)

EDITH

(cries; to Fred) He's got to make it... Henry has got to make it...

JAFFA

(cries; to Edith) He will... Henry is a strong husband; and a strong grandson.

(Fred continues performing CPR on Henry's chest. Henry recounts the last time this happened at Taylor General Hospital - and recounts that Henry's fire ability acts as a blood substance; and warns Edith & Jaffa to get out of the way in case of an accidental fire outburst from Henry's chest)

FRED

(to Edith & Jaffa) Edith... Jaffa. If I do manage to revive him; Henry's heart may engulf into flames... (to Edith) This happened before at the hospital... I'd advise you and Jaffa to get out of the way in case that happens-

EDITH

(cries; to Fred) Okay.... Okay Fred.

(Jaffa listens to Fred; and stands beside Edith. Fred continues to perform CPR on Henry's chest; and still fails. Henry's heart rate drops dramatically with the two bullet wounds; still engraved inside his chest. Fred worries he may not be able to revive Henry; but continues trying)

JAFFA

(cries; to collapsed Henry) Come on Henry.... Come on...

(Fred continues performing CPR on Henry's heart... Minutes later - Henry's heart engulfs into flame; and recovers to a normal beating rate; but is still unconscious. Fred jumps out of the way of the fire; Jaffa and Edith notice Henry's fireburst)

FRED

(relieved; to Edith & Jaffa) Righto... Henry has been revived...

EDITH

(relieved; to Fred) Oh thank goodness. Thank you God, and to you Fred....

JAFFA

(relieved; to Fred) Thanks Fred... Thanks...

(Fred notices two bullets are engraved inside Henry's chest. Fred pulls out his surgical tools; and begins surgically removing the two bullet shrapnels from inside Henry's chest - this proves successful)

FRED

(relieved; to Edith & Jaffa) Righto... The two bullet shrapnels inside his chest has been removed... Now...

JAFFA

(cries; to Fred) Henry's waist. He got shot in the waist to-

(Fred notices the bullet wound on Henry's arm)

FRED

(to Jaffa & Edith) He got shot in the arm to...

(Fred surgically removes the bullet shrapnel from Henry's waist; and arm. All bullet shrapnels from Henry's body have been removed. Fred stitches Henry's body up. MOMENTS LATER - Henry wakes, and opens his eyes. Henry coughs heavily; as he notices Fred, his grandmother and Jaffa at his aid. Jaffa and Edith are relieved to find Henry alive and recovering)

JAFFA

(relieved; to Henry) Henry.... Hey....

EDITH

(relieved; to Henry) Hey Henry... Hey...

(Henry recounts everything that happened quickly; and groans as he looks at Fred's hands stitching Henry's body up from his wounds. Henry groans and lays his head back down; and waves to everyone; haunted by all what has happened. Edith and Jaffa fear something is wrong with Henry; due to Henry making no response)

EDITH

(worried; to Henry) Henry... Are you? Are you okay?

(Henry begins to cry and shakes his head; and begins talking. Fred finishes stitching Henry's body up; and stands up. Henry sits up)

HENRY

(cries; to everyone) No... I... I remember everything... Everything...

(Jaffa bends down to Henry. Henry holds Jaffa's hand)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Henry... It wasn't your fault... It wasn't... It was your father's fault...

(Henry is deeply upset; that his honeymoon was disturbed)

HENRY

(upset; to Jaffa) He ruined our honeymoon. He ruined our HONEYMOON-

(Henry punches the ground with his fist)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) I know he did... I know... But we can always go on another one...

EDITH

(assures Henry) That's right Henry... You and Jaffa can always go on another one...

HENRY

(cries; to Edith) It's not fair Grandma... It's not fair...

EDITH

(to Henry) I know... I know...

(Henry stands up; and hugs his grandmother tightly)

HENRY

(cries; hugging Edith) Grandma... Grandma...

EDITH

(saddened; hugging Henry) I'm sorry I couldn't get to you in time... I'm sorry...

HENRY

(cries; hugging Edith) Grandma... I'm glad you're here now... I'm glad... I'm glad...

(Jaffa watches her husband hug his grandmother. Henry then looks at Fred; and stops hugging Edith)

HENRY

(cries; to Fred) Thank you Dad....

FRED

(to Henry) No worries.... No worries at all...

(Henry then looks at Jaffa)

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Jaffa. Jaffa-

(Henry hugs Jaffa)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) Henry... It's okay... It's okay...

HENRY

(cries; hugging Jaffa) It's not fair... It's not-

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) It's okay. It's okay. There will always be another time.. Let's-

(Edith is suddenly shot in the lung. Edith falls to the ground on her knees; Henry notices and frantically cries. Jaffa and Fred are both shocked)

JAFFA
(shocked; to Edith) Edith...

HENRY
(frantic; to Edith) Grandma... Grandma...

EDITH
(groans; to Henry) Henry... It's... It's okay...

HENRY
(frantic; to Edith) No... No... No..

(Henry puts his hands on his head in panic; and shakes his head. He then bends down towards Edith)

HENRY
(frantic; to Edith) Grandma... It's okay... Fred is here... (looks at Fred) Fred. Please...

(Edith puts her hand on Henry's barechest; and assures him it'll be okay if she dies. Fred bends down towards Edith; on and prepares to do surgery on Edith)

EDITH
(dying; assures Henry) Henry... It's okay... It's okay. It's going to be fine-

(Fred feels Edith's heartbeat; and instantly knows she is not going to make it - but hides it from Henry; afraid of Henry's rage and sorrow if he confessed)

HENRY
(crying; to Edith) Grandma... Fred is here... He will perform surgery.. You will survive...

(Edith continues having her hand on Henry's barechest; and feels his heartbeat. Edith smiles; and struggles as she is about to die)

EDITH
(dying; assures Henry) Henry... Henry... It's going to be fine...

HENRY
(crying; to Edith) No Grandma... Fred will-

(Fred breaks open his surgery
utensils; and prepares to revive
Edith; but realises it is no use;
with the bullet wound being fatal)

EDITH
(dying; assures Henry) You be the good man I
raised you to be, won't you?

HENRY
(crying; to Edith) No Grandma... Fred will
save you. (to Fred) Please Fred...

EDITH
(dying; assures Henry) Henry... Listen to
me... Look at me...

(Henry looks at his grandmother;
Edith holds Henry's hand)

EDITH
(dying; assures Henry) Fred can't... I'm
going to die Henry... I'm sorry... The wound
is fatal...

(Henry breaks down in sorrow;
realising his grandmother's
confession - and realising his
grandmother is about to die)

EDITH
(dying; assures Henry) You make sure you
look after Jaffa. You make sure you keep her
safe, won't you... (to Jaffa) And Jaffa...
Please... (coughs) Please look after Henry.
Guide him to the right direction in life...
Please...

JAFFA
(cries; to Edith) I will Edith... I will...
Thank you for helping me overcome my
schizophrenia...

(Edith smiles at Jaffa)

EDITH
(dying; to Jaffa) No worries.

(Henry cries; and frantically begs
to Fred to save his grandmother's
life)

HENRY

(frantically cries; to Fred) SAVE HER. SAVE GRANDMA-

FRED

(saddened; to Henry) Henry... I... I can't... The wound... it's fatal...

(Henry looks back at his grandmother; and falls into a depressive state. Henry breathes fast in sorrow)

EDITH

(dying; assures Henry) Henry... You be a good man.... I love you very much... and I will miss you very much... Never forget it... never...

(Henry cries frantically)

HENRY

(frantically cries) No... No... No... NO....

(Edith officially dies and is now deceased; her eyes close and her heart stops beating. Henry becomes severely depressed and refuses to speak; Fred looks at Henry)

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Henry... Hen... I'm sorry-

(Henry refuses to look at Fred or Jaffa; completely devastated of the loss of his grandmother. Henry frantically cries)

HENRY

(frantically cries; to deceased Edith) Grandma... Grandma... Grandma... Grandma...

(Jaffa cries to herself; and bends down; putting her hand on Henry's shoulder)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) I'm sorry Henry... I'm sorry...

(Henry ignores Jaffa; and is in deep sorrow of his grandmother's death. Henry frantically cries)

FRED

(saddened; to Henry) I'm sorry Henry... I'm sorry... If I could-

(Henry glares at Fred in anger)

HENRY
(angrily; to Fred) YOU COULD HAVE TRIED. YOU
COULD HAVE TRIED-

FRED
(saddened; to Henry) Henry... It was no use.
I could tell the wound was fatal... She did
to-

(MEANWHILE - Bobby after shooting
Edith from above ground; looks on
at Henry's sorrow. Bobby then
twists his ankle; and falls down
the passageway; with the handgun
on his stomach; and groans. Henry
stands up in anger; and notices
Bobby on the ground; groaning from
his twisted ankle; with the
handgun on his stomach. Henry
instantly targets Bobby as the
murderer; and glares at Bobby.
Bobby panics)

BOBBY
(scared; to Henry) Woah Henry... I know what
this looks like... Trust me... I do... But I
didn't-

(Henry goes into a feat of revenge
and rage; and grabs Bobby by the
throat and pushes him to the wall.
Bobby fears Henry is going to kill
him; over the death of Edith. Fred
fears the worse; of Henry becoming
a murderer due to revenge)

FRED
(grabs Henry's arm; to Henry) Henry...
No.... No...

(Henry instantly burns Bobby's
neck; and chokes him to death;
Bobby screams in the process.
Bobby falls to the ground;
deceased. Fred is shocked to see
Henry now become a criminal; after
killing Bobby in retribution of
his grandmother's death. Jaffa is
shocked; and lost for words)

FRED
(annoyed; to Henry) Henry. What the? WHAT
THE? What did you just do?

HENRY
(angrily; to Fred) What he DESERVED?
(MORE)

HENRY (CONT'D)

Grandma is dead because of him... BECAUSE OF HIM...

FRED

(worried; to Henry) Henry... Look... I know you're in grieving... your grandma has just been killed... But now you're a suspect in his murder... And you're a fugitive to the cops if they track it down... Oh my...

HENRY

(in sorrow; to Fred) I JUST LOST MY GRANDMA. MY GRANDMA MEANT EVERYTHING TO ME... UNDERSTAND... EVERYTHING. SHE WAS THE ONLY REASON I STAYED ALIVE ALL THESE YEARS. BECAUSE OF HER-

(Jaffa is shocked of Henry's murder of Bobby. Jaffa worries about Henry's wellbeing due to the loss of his grandmother; and walks by his side)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... Henry... I'm sorry... I miss your grandma to Henry... I miss her...

HENRY

(in sorrow; to Jaffa) NOT AS MUCH AS I DO. NOW I HAVE NO REASON TO LIVE ANYMORE. I DON'T... I DON'T WANT TO LIVE ANYMORE...

(This upsets Jaffa as Henry's wife)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... You still... You still have me... Don't forget me....

HENRY

(in sorrow; to Jaffa) I WANT GRANDMA. I WANT GRANDMA.

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) I know... I know... I know...

(Henry loses his mind and smashes his head on the concrete. Jaffa tries to stop Henry; Henry stops her from stopping him. Jaffa nods her head in fear; and steps backwards - allowing Henry to do whatever he wishes.

Fred stops him but fails; Henry knocks himself out by smashing his head on the concrete - in sorrow. Jaffa is worried; and looks at the dead corpse of Edith. Jaffa then looks at Fred)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Fred) Fred... He's a... Henry's a wreck....

FRED

(worried; to Jaffa) I know.... I don't know what to do... (looks at deceased Edith) I have to take her to the hospital... the morgue...

(Fred picks up the deceased Edith; and puts her in his sedan. Jaffa approaches the car; and is shocked by all what has happened)

FRED

(to Jaffa) Need a lift. I can drop you and Henry off at the house...

JAFFA

(shocked; to Fred) Yes... yes please...

(Jaffa helps Fred carry the unconscious Henry to his sedan. Minutes later; Fred drives Jaffa and the unconscious Henry home. They arrive; Fred helps carry the unconscious Henry into the barn of the house - the living room. Moments later - Fred makes his way to take Edith to the morgue at the hospital.

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - LIVING ROOM

(The unconscious Henry is laying on the 5-seater green sofa; Jaffa sits beside him. Jaffa still completely shocked by the event; is in grieving and cries; whilst looking at her unconscious husband. MOMENTS LATER - Henry wakes up from his coma; and recounts what had happened; Jaffa notices Henry is awake)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... Henry...

(Henry sits up; and ignores Jaffa - still in grieving and cries on his hands)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... I'm sorry. If there's anything I can do...

(Henry continues crying on his hands; deeply missing his grandmother)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) I miss Edith to... I miss her to...

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) My Mum died... Now my Grandma... No female relatives I have any more... No mother... No grandmother... (screams) NO ONE. NO ONE. NO ONE...

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) I'm your wife Henry... You have me...

HENRY

(screams; to Jaffa) My Grandma was different to you Jaffa. Grandma basically controlled my abilities; she practically raised me; she was the person I would go to if I had a bad day; she would comfort me when I was sad or down; and even scared. Now she's gone.... (throws glass) She's gone... SHE'S GONE-

(Henry makes his way to his reserved room at Fred's Farm Ranch Residence; he slams the door. Jaffa is upset; and is unsure of what to do)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S RESERVED ROOM

(Henry screams on his pillows and throws things at the wall; in deep grieving. Henry screams as he deeply misses his grandmother; Jaffa hears from the living room and has her head down. Henry screams as his hands engulf in flames; Henry notices his chest is inflamed; and breathes. The flames diminish off of Henry's body; Henry cries in heartbreak; laying on his stomach on the haybed. Jaffa decides to enter the room; and knocks)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... Henry....

(Henry cries on his pillow in his haybed; and ignores Jaffa)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... Henry... I'm sorry. I really am...

(Henry continues to ignore Jaffa; and rubs Henry's bare back for support. Henry feels the sensation; and cries on his pillows)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... If I could bring her back... I would...

(Henry's face is wet with heavy tears; and continues crying. Jaffa continues rubbing Henry's back)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Please... Please talk to me... Please...

(Henry becomes selfish due to grief)

HENRY

(frustrated; to Jaffa) What... HOW CAN YOU HELP ME JAFFA?

(Henry hops off the haybed; and looks at Jaffa)

HENRY

(screams; to Jaffa) HOW CAN YOU HELP ME? HOW CAN YOU HELP ME? HOW??

(Henry's hands become inflamed)

HENRY

(screams; to Jaffa) YOU STILL GOT A MUM. A FEMALE FIGURE. I GOT NO ONE... NO ONE... SO WHAT CAN YOU DO TO HELP ME. YOU WILL NEVER REPLACE MY GRANDMA-

(Jaffa becomes scared of Henry's rage directed at her)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) I'm not trying to replace your Grandma... I'm not trying to at all.

HENRY
 (screams; to Jaffa) THEN WHAT ARE YOU TRYING
 TO DO?

JAFFA
 (cries; to Henry) Be support to grief.
 That's all... (scared to Henry) Henry....
 Your hands.

(Henry looks at his inflamed hands
 once again; and breathes. The
 flames dissipate. Jaffa is hurt;
 and unsure of what to say to
 Henry. Henry looks at his hands)

HENRY
 (cries; to Jaffa) You know... My Grandma
 taught me to diminish the flames off myself
 when breathing... Now I don't have that
 anymore... I don't have her anymore...

(Jaffa cries at Henry's sorrow)

JAFFA
 (cries; to Henry) I know... I'm sorry...

(Henry cries; and hugs Jaffa
 tightly - not wanting to let go)

HENRY
 (cries; hugging Jaffa) I miss her... I miss
 her so much... I miss her...

JAFFA
 (cries; hugging Henry) I miss her too... I
 miss her too...

(Henry continues hugging Jaffa
 tightly)

JAFFA
 (cries; hugging Henry) I wanna offer you
 support Henry... I want to... Let's talk...
 Talking about it is better than holding it
 in...

HENRY
 (cries; hugging Jaffa) Okay... Okay...

(Henry stops hugging Jaffa; and
 looks at her - devastated and
 distraught with a wet face)

JAFFA
 (saddened; to Henry) Lay down... Lay down...

(Henry obeys Jaffa; and lays down on the haybed - distraught and very upset. Jaffa lays beside Henry on the haybed; and leans to the side. Henry leans to the side; and kisses Jaffa on the lips)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) I'm sorry Henry... I'm sorry...

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) I miss Grandma... I want her here...

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) I know you do... But your Grandma would want you to be happy. That's what she would want.

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) I'm only happy when she's alive... I will never be happy again-

(Jaffa cries at Henry's sorrow. Henry cries; Jaffa wipes Henry's tears with her fingers. Henry continues to cry; Jaffa holds Henry's hand. Henry looks at Jaffa's hand. MOMENTS LATER - Fred storms in the house; straight to Henry's reserved room to confront him over the murder of Bobby)

FRED

(angrily; to Henry) GET UP. GET UP HENRY. WE NEED TO TALK-

(Henry is shocked by Fred's angry voice; and stands up off the haybed. Fred glares at Henry; Henry glares back at Fred)

FRED

(annoyed; to Henry) YOU SHOULD NOT HAVE KILLED BOBBY...

HENRY

(angrily; to Fred) Bobby DESERVED IT. HE DESERVED IT-

FRED

(annoyed; to Henry) Yes he DID. But STILL. You are now a murderer. Just like Bobby is....

(Henry becomes frustrated with Fred)

HENRY
(frustrated; to Fred) GRANDMA MEANT THE WORLD TO ME. SHE MEANT EVERYTHING TO ME. YOU HEAR. FRIGGIN EVERYTHING-

(Henry's chest turns red)

FRED
(frustrated; to Henry) YES I KNOW SHE DID...

HENRY
(frustrated; to Fred) AND THAT BOBBY. TOOK SOMEONE AWAY FROM ME... WHO WAS MY ONLY REASON TO LIVE...

FRED
(frustrated; to Henry) YES I KNOW... BUT STILL. THERE ARE EVIL PEOPLE EVERYWHERE HENRY. BUT YOU DO NOT. KILL THEM. REGARDLESS. OR YOU'LL BE LOCKED AWAY IN LIFE IMPRISONMENT...

HENRY
(frustrated; to Fred) I DON'T CARE. I DON'T CARE. PEOPLE WILL PAY IF THEY HURT MY FAMILY. I DON'T CARE WHO THEY ARE...

(Fred is shocked of Henry's murderous words)

FRED
(frustrated; to Henry) SO WHAT... YOU'LL DO IT AGAIN....

HENRY
(frustrated; to Fred) YES I WILL. I BLOODY WILL...

(Fred is shocked; and leaves the room)

FRED
(frustrated; to Henry) You're a BLOODY MONSTER.

HENRY
(frustrated; to Fred) I'm what??

(Henry follows Fred outside his bedroom. Fred looks at Henry)

FRED
(angrily; to Henry) A MONSTER. THAT'S WHAT YOU ARE.

HENRY
(angrily; to Fred) I'M A MONSTER... NO. BOBBY IS A MONSTER. MY FATHER IS A MONSTER...

FRED

(angrily; to Henry) MY POINT. YOU'RE JUST LIKE YOUR BLOODY FATHER-

(This comment makes Henry furious. As Fred climbs down the barn stairs; Henry burns part of the rail with his hands; and throws it at Fred. Fred falls and groans)

HENRY

(furious; to Fred) DON'T COMPARE ME TO MY FATHER. I AM NOT LIKE HIM, AND WILL NEVER... EVER... BE LIKE HIM-

FRED

(angrily; to Henry) Look at the way you're behaving. Someone says something you don't like - YOU GET ANGRY AND HAVE A FIT. Like your bloody father. I remember it like yesterday - when your own mother called me to tell me how abusive your father was when she said something to him that he didn't like... YOU ARE EXACTLY THE SAME-

(Henry screams at Fred; and collapses one side of the staircase by burning the whole staircase rail down by hand. Fred groans as he falls)

FRED

(groans; to Henry) SEE... EXACTLY THE SAME... YOU'VE GOT SERIOUS ANGER ISSUES HENRY-

HENRY

(furious; to Fred) SHUT UP...

(Henry slams his bedroom door. Jaffa stays in the hallway; unsure of what to say or where to go)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING ROOM

(Jaffa makes her way to the dining room. Fred is annoyed; and is cooking 'mashed potato and sausages' for dinner. Jaffa starts talking)

JAFFA

(worried; to Fred) Fred. I uh...

(Fred turns his head towards Jaffa; with an annoyed expression on his face. Fred and Jaffa; hear Henry scream in sorrow and anger in his room)

FRED
(annoyed; to Jaffa) What is it Jaffa?

JAFFA
(worried; to Fred) Nothing I just... I just want someone to talk to...

FRED
(to Jaffa) You can talk to me-

(Jaffa sits at the dining room table)

JAFFA
(saddened; to Fred) I miss... I miss Edith...

FRED
(saddened; to Jaffa) So do I-

JAFFA
(saddened; to Fred) This is all... it's all just a big shock-

(Fred turns the stove down; and lets the potato cook and simmer).

FRED
(saddened; to Jaffa) I know...

JAFFA
(saddened; to Fred) How long do you think? How long do you think Henry will be angry for?

FRED
(worried; to Jaffa) Who knows?... Henry was so close to Edith before you came onto the scene... I've never seen such a close grandson-grandmother relationship before?

JAFFA
(saddened; to Fred) I understand... He would've been very close to her...

FRED
(to Jaffa) Oh he was... He really was...

(MOMENTS LATER - a calmed down, brokenhearted Henry walks down the staircase and enters the dining room. Fred looks at Henry; a distraught Henry sits at the dining room table next to Jaffa)

HENRY

(distraught; to Fred) I'm... I'm sorry
Fred...

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Have you calm down?

(Henry nods his head)

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Okay... and it's
alright... I understand... you're
grieving...

HENRY

(cries; to Fred) Fred... I just... I miss
Grandma... I miss her so much... I miss
her... I'm sorry...

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) I miss her to Henry...
But that anger of yours... it frightens
me... it does...

HENRY

(cries; to Fred) I know... And I'm
sorry... I'm... I don't want to be angry
like my Dad... I will. I will work on
myself...

(Jaffa holds Henry's hands)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) And I will help...

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) Thank you Jaffa... Thank
you...

(Henry and Jaffa hug each other.
Everyone begins eating. Henry
thinks of his grandmother; and
cries at her loss)

HENRY

(cries; to everyone) I guess.. I guess we've
got to plan a funeral..

FRED

(saddened; to Henry) Yes... We're going to
have to...

(Henry cries; as tears fall down
his face. Jaffa comforts Henry by
rubbing his back. Henry cries
whilst looking at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) I'm sorry Henry... for everything.. For truly everything...

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) Jaffa... You're the only woman I know... and have left... The only woman that is close to me... Mum's gone (sobs) and now Grandma... I can't lose you...

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) You won't... I promise... You won't...

(Jaffa strokes Henry's hair. Minutes later; Fred serves Henry & Jaffa 'mashed potato and sausages' for dinner. Everyone begins eating. 15 MINUTES LATER - they finish their meals)

FRED

(to Jaffa) Jaffa... I'll do the dishes... I'd like you and Henry to spend some more time together...

JAFFA

(to Fred) Yes okay sure... (looks at Henry) Let's go...

(Henry stands up beside Jaffa minutes later; wiping his tears. Jaffa makes her way to Henry's reserved room; Henry stops for a minute and wishes to bring something to the room with Jaffa)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Jaffa. I'll meet you there... I just want to get something...

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Okay Henry... Okay...

(Jaffa makes her way to Henry's reserved room. Henry makes his way to the packed boxes; in which Edith had packed for moving to Fred's Farm Ranch Residence. Henry grabs a large purple photo album; compiled of pictures of Beth, Edith & Henry together. Henry pulls out the album; and heads upstairs to his reserved room)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S
 RESERVED ROOM

Made in Highland

(MOMENTS LATER - Henry returns to his reserved room; and finds Jaffa sitting on his haybed. Henry smiles with the large purple photo album he has in his hands; and sits beside Jaffa on the haybed)

JAFFA

(questions Henry) What's that... that you've got in your hand??

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Photos... Of my Mum, Grandma and Me...

JAFFA

(to Henry) Show us the photos...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I'd like to get some photos of you and add it to the collection. My Mum, Grandma, and my Wife...

(Jaffa smiles at Henry and comforts him. A saddened; grieving Henry opens up the large purple photo album... and uncovers the first photo - Beth with the newborn Henry)

JAFFA

(questions Henry) Is that you as a baby?

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Yes... My Mum and me...

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) Damn... You were cute... and your Mum is so pretty... and she looks so happy...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Yeah... Mum was.... she was as special to me as special as Grandma was.... and they're gone... the world has taken them from me...

(Jaffa comforts Henry by rubbing his back)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) I know Henry... I know...

(A saddened Henry flicks through the set of photos compiled in the photo album and lands on a photo - a photograph with a shirtless Henry by the river; hugging his grandmother Edith. Jaffa notices the smile on Henry's face)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) You were so happy when you were around her...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Even before I met you... She was everything... She'd give me a reason to live everyday... She would give me light... and strength... to keep going...

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) And she did-

(Henry wipes the tears off his face. Jaffa continues to comfort Henry; by rubbing his back)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I can't... I can't look at any more photos... It's making me...

(Henry cries and closes the purple photo album; Jaffa comforts Henry)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) Lay down on the bed... Come on... Lay down...

(Jaffa lays down on the haybed; leaning on the side. Henry crawls his way to Jaffa on the haybed; and lays down beside her; and leans on the side. Jaffa holds her hand on Henry's bare chest)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) It's okay Henry... I'm still here... I will always be here for you...

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) Thanks Jaffa... Thanks... As long as you never leave me...

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) I won't...

(Henry cries and holds Jaffa's hand on his chest. Jaffa and Henry share a kiss. Moments later - Henry sits upwards - and begins a kissing spree. Jaffa holds Henry's arms once again; and they passionately kiss)

JAFFA

(kissing; to Henry) Good man.... Good man...

HENRY

(kissing; to Jaffa) I ain't stopping. I'm going... On... And... All... Night...

(Henry and Jaffa continue their kissing spree for 5 mins straight. Henry stops kissing; and lays back down beside Jaffa. Jaffa and Henry chuckle in love)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Now that was... that was good... once again...

HENRY

(chuckles; to Jaffa) Yes... It was... It felt good...

(Jaffa and Henry chuckle; Jaffa yawns)

JAFFA

(yawns; to Henry) Well Henry... I might head off to bed... I'm... I am a bit sleepy... And you should to...

HENRY

(looks at Jaffa) Okay Jaffa. You have a good night sleep...

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) And I love you very much... Never forget it...

HENRY

(in love; to Jaffa) I love you to... So much.. Goodnight...

(Minutes later; Jaffa closes her eyes and begins sleeping. Henry watches his asleep wife sleep; and breathes. Henry thinks of his grandmother and cries to himself; and continues looking at Jaffa - making a plea he will protect his wife at all costs from harm's way; ensuring he does not lose her like he lost both his mother and grandmother. Henry lays awake and looks at the ceiling; suddenly the strong wind knocks down the bookshelf downstairs in the living room; Fred groans. Henry worries about Fred and breathes; and hops out of the haybed. Henry looks at his wife; and pleas to return)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - LIVING ROOM

Made in Highland

(Henry arrives at the lounge room; and notices the heavy-durable bookshelf filled with books; has toppled over Fred due to the strong wind outside. Fred groans as he tries to break free; Henry instantly worries)

HENRY
(worried; to Fred) Fred... Fred...

FRED
(groans to Henry) Henry... Henry...

(Henry uses his strength; and lifts the heavy-durable bookshelf up by the arms; and grunts as he struggles with the weight. Fred is broken free; and stands up; Henry finally places the bookshelf upright in its original placement. Henry then looks at Fred)

FRED
(thankful; to Henry) Thanks son... Thanks...

HENRY
(looks at Fred) It's okay... It's... It's okay...

(Fred lightly smacks Henry's bare chest)

FRED
(smiles; to Henry) You're a good man when you want to be...

(Henry chuckles; and continues looking at Fred. Fred sits on the five-seater green sofa; and turns the TV on lightly. Henry breathes and remains standing near the TV)

FRED
(worried; to Henry) You all good?

HENRY
(nods head; to Fred) Yeah I'm fine... I'm alright...

(Henry breathes and is thinking of his abilities; and becomes nervous. Fred notices this)

FRED
(worried; to Henry) Goodness Henry... you look very tense... Are you still thinking about your grandmother?

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) It's that... and my... my ability scares me every night. Nothing new... every night... I just breathe because it helps me remain calm - something Grandma taught me for years...

FRED

(worried; to Henry) Righto... well keep breathing and relax...

HENRY

(breathes; to Fred) I will... I will...

(Henry breathes and continues looking at Fred. Fred is annoyed by Henry's continuous staring at him)

FRED

(annoyed; to Henry) Goodness Henry... Your staring is freaking me out a little... Do you mind?

(Henry is embarrassed; and stops staring at Fred)

HENRY

(embarrassed; to Fred) Oh sorry... Sorry... Sorry...

(Henry looks at the ground; and wants to say something. Fred realises this)

FRED

(to Henry) What do you want to say Henry?

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) Oh it's nothing... It's...

FRED

(to Henry) Oh it's something... I know...

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) So... you still believe that... that it is impossible to get rid of my abilities.

FRED

(worried; to Henry) I don't know if it's impossible... Just very dangerous and life-threatening to you... that's all...

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) Oh.

FRED

(to Henry) Learn to live with it Henry... It ain't going away... We all have things we don't like about ourselves... Just got to accept it; overcome barriers and keep moving forward...

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) Yeah... That's what Grandma always used to say... Always...

FRED

(to Henry) You've got to learn to relax more Henry... Just relax...

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) Yeah I know... I know...

FRED

(to Henry) Go talk to women about relaxation techniques. They tend to know about that stuff...

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) Yeah okay... I'll have to ask Jaffa... I'm going back to bed...

FRED

(to Henry) And I'm heading off to... Look Henry... Just breathe... and try to stop stressing...

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) I will...

FRED

(to Henry) And thanks for breaking me free from that bookshelf toppled all over me...

HENRY

(saddened; to Fred) It's okay... Anytime... Bye...

FRED

(to Henry) Bye...

(Henry heads back to his reserved room)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S RESERVED ROOM

(Henry returns to the room; and hops on the haybed next to Jaffa; and falls asleep.)

THE NEXT DAY - Henry wakes up with the sun blaring from the window into his eyes; Henry breathes and leans on the side to look at his wife; but Jaffa is not there. Henry instantly panics to himself)

HENRY
(panics; to himself) Jaffa... Jaffa...
Jaffa...

(Henry gets up off the haybed; and searches for Jaffa in the reserved room)

HENRY
(panics; to himself) Jaffa. Jaffa.

(No response. Henry is panicking; and exits the room)

HENRY
(screams for Jaffa) Jaffa... Jaffa...
Jaffa...

(Henry searches for Jaffa outside the room. Jaffa hears Henry's cry of scream in the kitchen; as she is making pancakes; and puts the stove on low - and makes her way to Henry)

HENRY
(screams for Jaffa) Jaffa... Jaffa. Jaffa-

(Jaffa makes her way to the bottom of the staircase; Henry notices his wife)

JAFFA
(worried; to Henry) Henry... It's okay...
It's okay... I'm here... I'm here...

(Henry cries; and makes his way down the staircase and hugs Jaffa instantly)

JAFFA
(hugging Henry) It's okay Henry... It's okay... I'm here...

HENRY
(hugging Jaffa) I was just worried... You weren't in bed... I was...

JAFFA
(hugging Henry) I was just making us all pancakes... That's all... It's okay...

HENRY
 (hugging Jaffa) Okay... Okay... I'm sorry...
 I just...

JAFFA
 (hugging Henry) No stressing Henry... Don't
 stress...

HENRY
 (hugging Jaffa) I won't... I won't...

(Jaffa stops hugging Henry)

JAFFA
 (smiles; to Henry) Come to the dining
 room... Time to eat...

(Henry listens to Jaffa; and
 follows her to the dining room
 table)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING
 ROOM

(Henry arrives at the dining room
 table; and takes a seat. Fred is
 sitting at the opposite side of
 the dining room table; as Jaffa is
 cooking herself and the two
 breakfast)

FRED
 (to Henry) Good morning son.

HENRY
 (to Fred) Good morning Fred.

(Jaffa finishes making Fred's
 pancakes; and adds a squirt of
 maple syrup on top. Jaffa serves
 the dish to Fred)

FRED
 (smiles; to Jaffa) Thanks Jaffa... and these
 are homemade are they?

JAFFA
 (to Fred) Straight from 'Beth's Top 5'
 recipe book...

(Henry recounts that 'Beth's Top
 5' is a recipe book that was
 published by his mother)

FRED

(chuckles; to Jaffa) Stealing all her recipes; are you Jaffa?

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Fred) No... not necessarily. I love cooking her meals... they are so damn delicious.

(Henry smiles. Minutes later; Jaffa serves Henry his dish of pancakes; topped with maple syrup)

HENRY

(smiles; to Jaffa) Thanks Jaffa. Thanks...

(Minutes later; Jaffa sits beside Henry at the dining room table. Everyone begins eating)

FRED

(eating; to Jaffa) Nice Jaffa... Nice... Homemade right from Beth's Book... Always better homemade than that packaged crap...

JAFFA

(eating; to Fred) Yeah it is... Delish...

(Henry remains quiet when he eats; enjoying every bite of his pancakes. The day is a very strong windy day; Fred is wearing a blue jacket with a white thermal shirt; and black pants; with black socks. Jaffa is still in her pink tank pyjama set & barefoot; Henry is still shirtless with his green nightie-shorts & barefeet. Jaffa starts to feel the cold; with the strong wind; Henry notices)

HENRY

(concerned; to Jaffa) Jaffa... You're... You're cold...

JAFFA

(shivers; to Henry) A bit I am... A bit of a windy day... Let me just get my-

(Jaffa stands up to fetch her purple nightie; Henry grabs her hand)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Jaffa. Let me... Let me warm you up... I will warm you up...

JAFFA
(shivers; to Jaffa) Okay... Okay...

(Henry finishes eating his serving
of pancakes; and burps in delight)

HENRY
(chuckles; to everyone) Excuse me...
Sorry...

FRED
(annoyed; to Henry) Pig...

(Henry chuckles at Fred; then
looks at Jaffa still standing)

HENRY
(to Jaffa) Sit down Jaffa. Sit down...

(Jaffa sits down; Henry hugs
Jaffa. Jaffa feels the heat of
Henry's skin and body temperature
warming up her body)

JAFFA
(hugged by Henry) So warm... So warm...

(Henry smiles)

FRED
(to Jaffa) Well Jaffa. You've got yourself a
walking heater...

JAFFA
(hugged by Henry; to Fred) He sure is... He
sure is a walking heater...

(Henry chuckles)

HENRY
(hugging Jaffa) Jaffa. If you're still a bit
cold; I can warm you up more...

JAFFA
(hugged by Henry) No... I'm fine... I'm
fine...

(Fred grabs the dirty dishes and
begins washing up. Jaffa is
relieved of Henry's warmth)

JAFFA
(hugged by Henry) You're so warm Henry... I
just... I can't believe how warm you are...

(Henry smiles)

FRED

(to Jaffa) Well Henry is fire and heat,
Jaffa.

JAFFA

(hugged by Henry; to Fred) Yeah I know... I
know that...

(Henry continues to smile)

FRED

(chuckles; to Fred) It's got me stuffed on
how you're not cold Henry...

(Henry's ability makes him
invulnerable to the cold; as well
as fire & heat)

HENRY

(hugging Jaffa; to Fred) I... I can't... I
can't feel the cold...

FRED

(to Henry) You'd be very useful in Winter...
So useful...

(Henry smiles at Fred; then looks
downwards at Jaffa - hugging her
tightly; releasing his heat on
Jaffa)

JAFFA

(hugged by Henry) Thank you Henry... Thank
you...

HENRY

(hugging Jaffa) No worries Jaffa... No
worries...

(Suddenly - the strong wind howls
outside the barn; making the
garbage bins fall over; thus
creating a big dust-storm. Fred
notices)

FRED

(to himself) Shit... A big dust storm
outside...

(Henry ignores Fred; and continues
hugging Jaffa tightly)

JAFFA

(hugged by Henry) Henry... I think today...
we have to talk about your grandma's
funeral...

HENRY
 (saddened; hugging Jaffa) Yes... Okay...
 Okay...

(Henry becomes saddened; and
 thinks about his grandma; and
 starts crying. Henry stops hugging
 Jaffa)

JAFFA
 (saddened; to Henry) I know it's... It's...

FRED
 (to Jaffa) Jaffa's right Henry... We've got
 to talk about this...

HENRY
 (cries; to everyone) Okay... Okay... Okay...

FRED
 (to everyone) Location. Time.

JAFFA
 (to Fred) I was thinking maybe Taylor
 Uniting Church...

(Henry recounts the last time he
 was at the church; and remembers
 being despised by the pastor)

HENRY
 (saddened; to Jaffa) We can't go there...

JAFFA
 (questions Henry) What... why?

HENRY
 (saddened; to Jaffa) The pastor doesn't like
 me there...

JAFFA
 (worried; to Henry) Oh okay...

FRED
 (questions Henry) Why doesn't the pastor
 like you?

HENRY
 (saddened; to Fred) The pastor is afraid of
 my abilities. Called me a devil last time I
 was there...

(Jaffa is shocked to hear of this)

FRED
 (questions Henry) When was that?

HENRY
 (saddened; to Fred) Months ago... with
 Grandma... He told me to get out and not
 come back...

FRED
(to Henry) Woah...

HENRY
(saddened; to Jaffa) It has to be somewhere else...

JAFFA
(to Henry) Right... There'll be other places... Let me just think-

FRED
(to Jaffa) He's been kicked out of Beth's Diner to because of the incident...

JAFFA
(to everyone) Maybe down by the river... Yeah... that'll be good. It's not really a public place, but it'll be fine.

(Henry nods his head in agreement)

FRED
(to Jaffa) Agreed.

JAFFA
(to everyone) Okay... Now time...

HENRY
(to Jaffa) 11:30am.

FRED
(to Jaffa) Agreed.

JAFFA
(to everyone) Agreed... Date...

FRED
(to Jaffa) Two days from now...

(Everyone agrees of the date)

JAFFA
(to Fred) Now... we've got to get formal wear. (to Henry) Henry) Henry. You and I are shopping for a tux this morning...

HENRY
(to Jaffa) Okay...

JAFFA
(to Henry) And I've got to get a black dress. What about you Fred?

FRED
(to Jaffa) I've got one in the wardrobe... You both better get ready then...

(Henry and Jaffa look at each other; and nod their heads.
 MOMENTS LATER - Henry is dressed in a red shirt, black jeans, and red thongs. Jaffa is dressed in a white off-the-shoulder top with black jeans, and white sandals. Henry and Jaffa return to the dining room; Fred notices them both)

FRED
 (to Henry & Edith) Well off you go...

JAFFA
 (to Henry) You all ready Henry...

(Henry thinks about the funeral and his grandmother; and becomes emotional about it)

HENRY
 (saddened; to Jaffa) Yeah... It's fine...
 I'm fine... I'm fine...

(Jaffa comforts Henry; and hugs him)

JAFFA
 (worried; to Henry) I know this is hard... I know...

HENRY
 (saddened; to Jaffa) As long as you... as long as you're there with me... That's all I want...

JAFFA
 (comforts Henry) I will be there... I always will be there... Let's go-

(Henry follows Jaffa outside; as they wait for a taxi. The taxi arrives minutes later; and they drive to the outdoor shopping stores - EX TAYLOR SUITE)

 INT. EX TAYLOR SUITE

(They arrive at EX TAYLOR SUITE - a combination of outdoor shopping stores - consisting of food chains; women's formal wear; men's formal wear. Henry and Jaffa hop out of the taxi; the taxi drives off. Henry looks at Jaffa)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Right... The tuxedo shop is directly in front of us... We've just got to cross this busy road-

(Cars drive by; and the traffic flows throughout the road. Jaffa and Henry cross the road where no traffic flies by; they arrive at the entrance of EX TAYLOR SUITE)

INT. GLORIOUS MENS - EX TAYLOR SUITE

(Glorious Mens - a formal menswear store; dedicated to tuxedo, razors, and pants. Henry and Jaffa enter the store. The male shopkeeper, greets Henry and Jaffa)

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(to Jaffa) Hello there... How are you today?

JAFFA

(to Shopkeeper) Yes... hi... I'm just here shopping for a tuxedo for my man...

(Henry smiles at Jaffa's words)

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(to Jaffa) Sure thing. (to Henry) So um sir... what are you looking for in style? Black, green, purple tie?

HENRY

(socially awkward; to Shopkeeper) Um. Black I suppose... Yeah I think... I think black...

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(chuckles; to Jaffa) Your man is shy I see... Well uh.. I think this black tuxedo suit with a purple tie would be great for you. Pair that up with some loafers... He'll be looking handsome for you in no time...

(Jaffa laughs at the Male Shopkeeper's sense of humour)

Made in Highland

JAFFA

(chuckles; to Shopkeeper) Well you're a funny man... I bet your lady loves your sense of humour.

(Henry remains socially awkward; and watches his wife chuckle and talk with the Shopkeeper)

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(to Henry) Well uh... Try this tux suit on in the change rooms sir... What's your name by the way?

(The Shopkeeper hands Henry the tuxedo suit to try on. Henry grabs it)

HENRY

(socially awkward; to Shopkeeper) Henry... The uh... The name is Henry...

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(smiles; to Henry) Good to meet you BRO. Now change into that tuxedo suit and impress your lady...

(Henry is annoyed by the Shopkeeper; and enters the change rooms; Jaffa and the Shopkeeper wait by outside the change rooms. Henry changes into the pants of the tuxedo suit; and takes his red shirt off; throwing it on the ground. Henry puts the white-button-up shirt on; and puts the black blazer on himself. Henry then grabs the purple tie; and gets frustrated by doing the tie incorrectly. Henry gets annoyed and notices his fingers turning red; Henry breathes; not wanting to lose control. Henry gives up; and incorrectly puts the tie up on himself - and showcases his attire to his wife Jaffa)

JAFFA

(notices Henry's attire) You look nice Henry... but your tie...

(Jaffa walks up close to Henry; and ties the purple tie correctly on the tuxedo suit)

HENRY

(whispers to Jaffa) Thank you... It's so frustrating... the tie part...

JAFFA

(whispers to Henry) It's all good Henry... I don't mind helping you look handsome..

(Henry smiles. The Shopkeeper notices Henry's attire; and is impressed)

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(to Henry) Well you look handsome... but does she think you look handsome...

JAFFA

(to Shopkeeper) My Husband is handsome... He looks bloody beautiful-

(The Shopkeeper laughs with Jaffa. Henry glares at the Shopkeeper; not liking his sense of humour one bit. Henry returns to the change rooms; and changes into the casual clothes he was wearing before. Henry holds the tuxedo suit in his hands; with the tie; and heads for the cash register. The Shopkeeper notices Henry is at the cash register; and makes his way there to process the transaction. Jaffa follows thereafter)

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(processes transaction) \$81.50 thanks.

(Henry pulls out his debit card; and taps it on the EFTPOS machine. The transaction has been successfully processed)

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(to Henry) Thanks sir... Have a good day...

HENRY

(annoyed; to Shopkeeper) I will.

(Henry leaves the store with an annoyed expression on his face; and waits outside for Jaffa)

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(worried; to Jaffa) Your Husband I don't think... I don't think likes me...

JAFFA

(to Male Shopkeeper) Henry's just... he's just a very shy person. That's all... He's just very shy...

MALE SHOPKEEPER

(worried; to Jaffa) Oh okay... Well tell him thanks for his business...

JAFFA

(to Male Shopkeeper) Will do... I'll tell him that...

INT. EX TAYLOR SUITE

(Henry waits outside by the exit of Glorious Mens - with a shopping bag with his brand new; bought tuxedo inside. Jaffa arrives outside and notices a not-so-happy; annoyed Henry)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Henry... Did he... Did he annoy you?

HENRY

(nods head; to Jaffa) A bit... yeah... A bit...

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Don't worry... you're hotter... and much cuter than him anyway...

(Henry smiles. Jaffa looks at the shopping bag Henry is holding; Jaffa smiles at Henry)

JAFFA

(smiles; to Henry) Do you uh... Do you like the tux you got?

(Henry becomes upset; over thinking of his grandmother. Jaffa worries)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Henry... Henry... What's wrong?

HENRY

(shakes head; to Jaffa) Nothing... Nothing... Nevermind...

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) It's something Henry...

(Jaffa holds Henry's arm)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) It's okay... Tell me... I'm here...

Made in Highland

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I'm just thinking about Grandma... It's just Grandma.. that's all... I miss her...

(Henry starts to cry in grief;
Jaffa hugs Henry)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

(Jaffa stops hugging Henry minutes later)

JAFFA

(to Henry) I just need to get some formal clothes for the funeral. I'll just get that and we'll go home..

(Henry cries and nods his head at Jaffa. Jaffa and Henry make their way to "Women's Delight" - a formal womenswear store; selling dresses; jumpsuits etc)

INT. WOMENS DELIGHT - EX TAYLOR SUITE

(Henry and Jaffa walk into the "Women's Delight" store. The interior covers purple wallpaper; and pink flooring with glass windows. The shopkeeper fronts Jaffa and Henry)

FEMALE SHOPKEEPER

(smiles; to Jaffa) Hello there young lady... How can I help you?

JAFFA

(smiles; to Female Shopkeeper) Oh I'm just looking for a black dress....

FEMALE SHOPKEEPER

(smiles; to Jaffa) Oh... what's the occasion) What is it???

JAFFA

(Blunt; to Female Shopkeeper) It's no special occasion... it's a funeral...

(An awkward silence. Henry puts his head down in sadness)

FEMALE SHOPKEEPER

(worried; to Jaffa) Oh sorry... Oh... It's just...

JAFFA

(to Female Shopkeeper) It's okay... It's okay... I'm just... I'm just looking for a short black dress please...

(The female shopkeeper guides Jaffa to the dresses section(s) of the store. The female shopkeeper showcases an off-the-shoulder black short dress. Jaffa is appealed to it; and tries it on. Henry waits for Jaffa by the cash register. Jaffa is satisfied with the dress; and she makes her way to the till. Jaffa processes the transaction; and heads outside with Henry)

FEMALE SHOPKEEPER

(to Jaffa) Thanks for your business...

INT. EX TAYLOR SUITE

(Henry and Jaffa sit by outside the "Womens Delight" store; Jaffa holds her shopping bag. Jaffa and Henry look at each other)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Righto... You ready to go home?

(A saddened Henry nods his head; thinking of his grandmother in grief)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Let's go... I'm gonna make chickpea curry tonight`-

(Suddenly; a voice speaks from behind Henry and Jaffa)

PASTOR JACKSON

(scared; to Jaffa) Please stay away from that man... Young lady...

(Henry and Jaffa turn their heads; Jaffa notices Pastor Jackson for the first time. Pastor Jackson strongly dislikes Henry; and wishes Jaffa to stay clear of Henry; unaware she is actually married to him)

JAFFA

(shocked; to Pastor Jackson) Who... Who are you?

Made in Highland

PASTOR JACKSON

(worried; to Jaffa) This man... this man is dangerous... It's up to you who you choose to be with; and live your life with... but I know the power this man possesses... it is devilish...

(Henry is insulted and hurt; and tries to take Jaffa away from Pastor Jackson. Jaffa follows Henry's guide)

PASTOR JACKSON

(shouts; to Henry) YOU'RE A DAMN MONSTER
HENRY... YOU'RE A MONSTER. YOU'RE NO
SAVIOUR. YOU DEVIL... (screams to Henry)
DEVIL...

(The crowd looks at Henry; as Henry and Jaffa walk by. Henry is upset and emotionally hurt; and makes his way with Jaffa outside the complex of Ex Taylor Suite. Jaffa is shocked by the incident; and looks at an ashamed; hurt Henry. They make their way home)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING
ROOM

(Henry & Jaffa arrive home; with their shopping bags. Fred is at the kitchen; cooking scrambled eggs for himself. Henry is ashamed of what had happened; Jaffa questions him)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) Henry... Was that... that pastor?

(A saddened Henry shakes his head; wanting to forget what had happened)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) It must have been..

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) What happened?

JAFFA

(concerned; to Fred) No idea Fred.. I uh.. This old man called Henry a devil and told me to stay away from him. I assume it was the pastor.

(Henry grows annoyed; and hurt over the abuse he copped by the Pastor Jackson at Ex Taylor Suite)

HENRY

(annoyed; to Jaffa & Fred) Yes it was... It was... I don't want to talk about it... I want to forget it...

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) Okay Henry... Okay...

(Henry walks to his reserved room; holding his shopping bag; annoyed and emotionally hurt by what was said to him. Jaffa follows Henry to the reserved room)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S RESERVED ROOM

(Henry puts the shopping bag of his purchased tuxedo; on his bed. Henry breathes; and looks outside the window. Jaffa enters the room; and worries)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) I'm sorry Henry... I didn't mean to annoy you before... I was just concerned...

(Henry shakes his head; not wanting to talk about it; still emotionally hurt; missing his grandmother deeply)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) I uh... Is there anything I can do? Anything you want to do?

(Henry shakes his head)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I think I want some alone time... please....

(Jaffa worries Henry despises her)

JAFFA

(upset; to Henry) I have upset you... haven't I...

HENRY

(annoyed; to Jaffa) No Jaffa. You haven't... you haven't... I just want some alone time... Please...

Made in Highland

JAFFA

(upset; to Henry) No I have... Henry... I'm sorry... I'm sorry...

(Henry grows annoyed; and screams at Jaffa)

HENRY

(screams; to Jaffa) I SAID YOU HAVEN'T-

(Annoyed - Henry engulfs in flames; tearing the shirt off himself. Embarrassed; Henry covers his barechest with his arms; the fire dissipates. Jaffa notices Henry's embarrassment; as Henry looks at the teared remains of his shirt on the floor. Henry shakes his head; in embarrassment. Jaffa panics at Henry's anger directed towards her; Jaffa stands backwards)

JAFFA

(saddened; to Henry) Henry... I'm... I'm sorry....

(Jaffa opens the door. Henry is emotionally damaged and embarrassed; with his arms wrapped around his barechest - and begs Jaffa to stay)

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) No... No... No please don't go... Please...

(Jaffa notices Henry's invulnerability of being alone. Jaffa closes the door; and looks at Henry)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

(Henry hugs Jaffa; and cries to his emotional pain. Jaffa feels the warmth of Henry's skin touching hers)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

HENRY

(saddened; hugging Jaffa) Please Jaffa... Please stay with me... Please...

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) I will Henry... I always will..

(Henry smiles with a saddened look on his face; and continues hugging Jaffa)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) I will always be here for you Henry... Always... As wife to you...

HENRY

(cries; hugging Jaffa) Thanks Jaffa. Thanks...

(Henry doesn't want to let go. Henry cries; as he gains comfort from his wife Jaffa)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) I will always love you Henry... Always...

HENRY

(cries; hugging Jaffa) I will always love you to... I will to...

(Jaffa stops hugging Henry minutes later; Henry cries as he looks at Jaffa; Henry puts her palm on Henry's barechest)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) It's okay.... It's okay...

(Jaffa looks at the teared shirt on the bedroom floor; Henry watches as Jaffa picks up the teared remains by the handful; and makes her way to the garbage bin)

HENRY

(concerned; to Jaffa) Jaffa... Where... Where you going?

JAFFA

(assures Henry) Garbage bin Henry... I will be back... Just wait there...

(Henry breathes. Jaffa leaves to the garbage bin. Henry looks down at his barechest; and is embarrassed and annoyed of his inability to keep a shirt on. Henry shakes his head as he looks at his barechest)

HENRY
(cries to himself) Why me?? Why me??

(Jaffa returns to the room; and notices Henry crying to himself)

JAFFA
(to Henry) Hey... I'm back... I'm back-

(Henry makes his way toward Jaffa and picks her up and carries her. Jaffa smiles; Henry smiles in sadness)

JAFFA
(romantically; to Henry) Where are you going to take me?

(Henry lays Jaffa down on the haybed. Henry crawls on top of her; bending upwards; and begins a kissing spree. Jaffa holds Henry's arms as he kisses her)

JAFFA
(kissing Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

HENRY
(kissing Jaffa) I'm sorry... For... For... Be...fore...

JAFFA
(kissing Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

(Henry non-stop kisses Jaffa for 5 mins straight. Henry falls to the side of the bed minutes later; Jaffa grabs Henry's hand)

JAFFA
(comforts Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

HENRY
(saddened; to Jaffa) Jaffa... I get so embarrassed when I...

JAFFA
(comforts Henry) When you what... what do you mean?

(Henry points at his chest; referring to his inability to keep shirts on)

HENRY
(saddened; to Jaffa) This... You know...

(Jaffa understands)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) Don't worry about it...
Don't worry about it...

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I do... it's
embarrassing...

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Are you embarrassed
around me?

HENRY

(confused; to Jaffa) No... I uh...

(Jaffa kisses Henry on the lips;
and puts her hand on Henry's
barechest)

JAFFA

(in love; to Henry) Don't change yourself to
make me happy. I love you for who you are...

(Henry cries at Jaffa's heartfelt
words)

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) Thank you...

(MINUTES LATER - Jaffa tickles
Henry's barechest. Henry screams
in laughter from the excitement;
and tries to break free. Jaffa
then tickles Henry's stomach;
Henry continues to laugh from
being tickled and tries to tickle
Jaffa. Jaffa breaks free; and
stands up off the bed. Henry
laughs from being tickled)

JAFFA

(romantically; to Henry) Come get me my
fireman...

(Jaffa screams in excitement as
she runs outside; playing hide-
and-seek with Henry. Henry grows
excited in love; and runs outside
to try to catch Jaffa)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(It is 9pm at night - Jaffa hides
beside the purple hatchback.

Made in Highland

Jaffa laughs as she hears Henry's footsteps. Henry smiles; and searches for Jaffa. Jaffa laughs. SUDDENLY FROM BEHIND - Henry grabs Jaffa by the arms; and holds her by force. Jaffa laughs; Henry laughs)

HENRY
(in love; to Jaffa) You are caught...

JAFFA
(in love; to Henry) Dammit fireman...
Dammit...

(Henry laughs; and lets Jaffa go. Jaffa tickles Henry's chest and stomach again; Henry laughs loudly in excitement; Jaffa makes a run. Henry laughs; and makes a chase for Jaffa and captures her yet again. Henry and Jaffa laugh)

JAFFA
(in love; to Henry) You are too fast my man... Way too fast...

HENRY
(in love; to Jaffa) Oh I love you so much...
So much...

(Henry carries Jaffa. Jaffa points her finger at Henry's nose; Henry laughs)

JAFFA
(smiles; carried by Henry) You know...
Christmas is coming up Rudolph...

(Henry laughs at being called Rudolph and walks around the paddock late at night; whilst carrying his wife Jaffa)

HENRY
(smiles; carrying Henry) Yes it is...

JAFFA
(smiles; carried by Henry) I've got to buy you a Christmas present... I have to... I have to think of what you like...

HENRY
(smiles; carrying Henry) I don't like much of christmas presents; I just want my family; the ones I love around me...

JAFFA

(smiles; carried by Henry) Oh that's sweet.
That's sweet-

(Jaffa looks around the outside environment; whilst Henry carries her around; feeling the warmth of his skin touching hers)

JAFFA

(smiles; carried by Henry) You're so warm...
You're so warm... especially on a cold
night...

(Henry romantically warms his body temperature up; Jaffa feels the heat from his bare chest)

JAFFA

(in love; carried by Henry) Well aren't you
romantic...

HENRY

(in love; carrying Jaffa) As long as you're
warm; that's all that matters...

(Jaffa smiles; as Henry continues to carry his wife around the paddock. Jaffa notices the cattle)

JAFFA

(to Henry; carried by Henry) Cattle. They
are such large, amazing creatures.

HENRY

(to Jaffa; carrying Jaffa) They are Sandra,
Smithy and Smelly...

(Sandra moos at Henry's love and affection to his wife. Henry notices)

HENRY

(to Sandra; carrying Jaffa) Yes Sandra...
This is my most beautiful wife... This is my
most-

(Suddenly a needle gets struck into Henry's bare back; Henry screams as he puts Jaffa carefully down on the ground. Sandra moos in shock; Jaffa cries frantically)

JAFFA

(frantic; to Henry) Henry... Henry...

(Henry cries from the intense pain of the needle on his back; he screams in complete agony)

JAFFA

(frantic; to Henry) Henry... Let me get it out... Let me get it out...

(Jaffa carefully takes the sharp needle out of Henry... Henry screams in agony; and engulfs in flames - the loss of control begins. Henry notices; and screams in fear)

HENRY

(screams; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Jaffa. Get away from me... Quick... Quick.. I'm... I'm losing control... Run...

(Jaffa runs. Henry tries to escape; a rope brings Henry down heavily inflamed. It is the army and the air force; parking their huge tanks in the backyard. Henry screams and looks up at the sight of the army; Henry struggles through the pain; as his body is heavily inflamed. The ARMY LIEUTENANT makes an appearance; and glares at Henry)

ARMY LIEUTENANT

(to Army Captain) This is the young man... Fireman...

(The Army Captain makes his way toward an injured; fiery Henry. The Army Captain pulls out an assault rifle; and points it at Henry. Fred arrives outside; from the shock)

ARMY CAPTAIN

(to ARMY LIEUTENANT) I don't think this would be powerful enough-

JAFFA

(screams in fear; to Army Captain) No... No please...

(The ARMY LIEUTENANT hands the Army Captain a powerful shotgun. The Army Captain shoots Henry in the arm; Henry screams in agony)

ARMY CAPTAIN

(fearsome; to Henry) DO YOU KNOW WHO I AM? Of all the people you have hurt; in all their top ranks - you can't hurt me... The police force, the secret service even... Even the goddamn ARMY LIEUTENANT... I'm above and unstoppable...

Made in Highland

(The Army Captain shoots Henry in the arm again; Henry screams whilst heavily inflamed. Fred is in shock; and notices Jaffa crying in fear. Fred fronts the Army Captain)

FRED

(worried; to Army Captain) Please sir... Please... Don't do this...

ARMY CAPTAIN

(annoyed; to Fred) Oh piss off man... You're not worth my time... and DO NOT interfere in my business. This young man is getting killed tonight... Too goddamn dangerous...

JAFFA

(cries; to Army Captain) No... No please... Please...

(The ARMY LIEUTENANT handcuffs Jaffa; and takes her into custody)

ARMY CAPTAIN

(annoyed; to Jaffa) And you're getting questioned. Interfering in army business; despicable... In the tank...

(This upsets Henry like never before; and he spurts out a large blaze from his chest; towards all tanks surrounding the backyard. The tanks blow up; turn to the side; from Henry's self-made explosion. Henry grows angry; and breaks himself free from the rope)

HENRY

(screams; to Jaffa) LET HER GO NOW...

(The Army Captain shoots Henry's other shoulder. Henry screams and loses his mind; attacking the Army Captain to the ground; with his heavily engulfed chest. The Army Captain punches Henry in the face; Henry screams and burns the Army Captain's cheeks with his fiery hands; the Army Captain falls unconscious. Henry screams in anger; other army officers attack Henry from behind; Henry glares at the officers and spurts out a large blaze from his back. The large blaze burns the trees; burns the purple hatchback; and burns some of the officers.

The officers scream; Henry viciously looks at the ARMY LIEUTENANT. The ARMY LIEUTENANT shoots Henry in the arm; Henry screams and pushes the ARMY LIEUTENANT to the tank; choking him. The ARMY LIEUTENANT struggles; Henry knees the ARMY LIEUTENANT; Henry then bites the ARMY LIEUTENANT's face; disfiguring him; the ARMY LIEUTENANT screams; Henry kicks the ARMY LIEUTENANT in the stomach; knocking him unconscious. One last army soldier points a gun at Henry's back; Henry glares at the soldier - Henry grabs the gun with force; and kicks the soldier down. All officers are down - a vicious; heavily inflamed Henry; tries to calm down. Fred and Jaffa are in shock)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) Henry... Henry... Are you??

(Henry shakes his head; still very vicious-looking and dangerous to be around)

FRED

(whispers to Jaffa) Jaffa. I wouldn't at the moment. He's consumed of anger and rage... he'd be dangerous at the moment.

(A heavily; inflamed Henry looks viciously at the fallen soldiers; Jaffa notices Henry's viciousness look at the officers. Jaffa worries)

JAFFA

(whispers to Fred) Oh my... I've never seen Henry so angry... I've never...

FRED

(whispers to Jaffa) Stay away Jaffa. He'd be incredibly dangerous to be around. (to Henry) Henry... Jaffa and I will be inside...

(Henry nods his head; acknowledging his comment; refusing to look at Fred and Jaffa. Fred and Jaffa head inside)

 INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - DINING ROOM

Made in Highland

(Jaffa is sitting at the dining room table; Fred is making them both bacon and eggs)

FRED

(smiles; to Jaffa) Bacon and eggs. God I loved these when I was a kid... Yummy...

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - OUTSIDE

(Jaffa is concerned with Henry. MEANWHILE - Henry falls on his stomach; and breathes; and breathes - diminishing the flames off himself fully. Henry looks inside viciously; and stops himself - avoiding the devil inside him. Henry looks down and breathes; and works on smiling - discarding the viciousness inside him. This takes 10 mins. Henry reverts back to his normal state; and stands up; groaning with his gunshot wounds. Henry makes his way back inside)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE

(Henry walks inside; Fred and Jaffa notice)

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) All good Henry...

HENRY

(tense; to Fred) Yes... I uh... I'm fine.. I'm fine...

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Bacon and eggs. Want some?

HENRY

(tense; to Fred) Yes... Yes please... Please...

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Righto... Coming up...

(Henry sits beside Jaffa at the table. Henry wishes to hold Jaffa's hand; Jaffa holds Henry's hand)

JAFFA

(upset; to Henry) Henry... Henry... I'm sorry... I'm sorry this happened...

(Henry stays quiet; and is very tense; and puts his index finger on Jaffa's lips. Jaffa smiles; Henry hugs Jaffa with his strength)

JAFFA

(hugging Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

(Henry doesn't talk much; overcome with tension; and continues hugging Jaffa - allowing himself to fully calm down and relax himself around Jaffa. Fred finishes the serving of Henry's 'Bacon & Eggs;' and notices Henry hugging Jaffa)

FRED

(to Henry) Sorry to interrupt Henry... But your meal is ready...

(A tense Henry stops hugging Jaffa; and smiles at her. Henry grabs the knife and fork with tension; and bends it as he eats. The vicious look on Henry's face becomes apparent to Fred; Fred is in shock)

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Henry... What the hell?

(A tense Henry is confused)

HENRY

(tense; to Fred) What... What...

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Your face... God it looks monstrous... That's the face you had when you were out beating those army soldiers... Stop it...

(Henry understands what Fred is saying; and apologises in sadness)

HENRY

(tense; to Fred) Fred... I'm sorry.... I'm sorry. The anger is still... inside me...

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) Well you still haven't fully calm down... Go outside more and calm down... Please...

HENRY

(tense; to Fred) No I'll work on calming down inside... I will... I'm sorry...

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) No... please... Please go outside and calm down fully.,

HENRY

(tense; to Fred) No it's okay... I'm hungry... and I will work on it... I will. I just want-

FRED

(concerned; to Henry) No Henry... Please go outside and calm down... Please...

(A tense Henry grows annoyed with Fred)

HENRY

(tense; to Fred) I SAID I'M FUCKIN HUNGRY... I AM NOT GOING OUTSIDE...

(Fred is shocked of Henry's outburst. Henry's barechest engulfs in flames; Henry covers his barechest with his arms. Fred worries. Fred leaves the scene in fear. Henry realises his angry outburst; and cries on the dining room table; heavily inflamed. The table breaks; Jaffa's glass plate of 'Bacon & Eggs' fall to the ground; smashing the plate into pieces. Jaffa jumps out of the way; and looks at her breakfast on the floor. Henry remains seated; in shock; crying with his hands on his head)

HENRY

(tense; to Jaffa) I'm sorry... I'm sorry...

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) No it's okay... It's okay... It's...

(Jaffa rubs Henry's back. Henry feels the sensation)

HENRY

(tense; to Jaffa) Thank you... That... That feels good...

(Jaffa continues rubbing Henry's back; Henry enjoys the sensation. Jaffa then notices the bullet wounds on both of Henry's shoulders)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) Oh Henry... Your shoulders and...

(Jaffa puts her palm on the punctured needle wound on Henry's back)

JAFFA

(concerned; to Henry) And your back... But the bullet wounds on your shoulders... I've got to get them out... Let's head up to the room...

HENRY

(tense; to Jaffa) Okay... Okay...

(Jaffa walks Henry to the reserved room)

INT. FRED'S FARM RANCH RESIDENCE - HENRY'S RESERVED ROOM

(Henry is sitting up on the haybed; Jaffa sits beside Henry on the haybed - carefully extracting the bullet shrapnels with surgical utensils; from Henry's shoulders. Henry groans in agony; Jaffa finishes. The wounds on Henry's shoulders begin to heal)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) All done... All done Henry...

HENRY

(tense; to Jaffa) Thank you... Thank you Jaffa. Thank you...

(Jaffa stands up; and puts the surgical utensils away. Henry looks at his wife; and smiles in love. Jaffa returns and sits beside Henry on the haybed. Henry fully sits up; and hugs Jaffa. Jaffa smiles in love; and comforts Henry)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

(Henry stops hugging Jaffa; and kisses her on the lips. Jaffa smiles; and kisses Henry on the lips.)

Jaffa lays down on the haybed;
Henry crawls towards Jaffa on the
bed; and kisses her romantically.
Jaffa holds Henry's arms as they
kiss; Henry doesn't want to stop)

JAFFA
(kissing Henry) It's-

(Henry puts his index finger on
Jaffa's lips. Henry continues
kissing Jaffa; Jaffa smiles. Henry
stops 10 minutes later; and looks
at Jaffa)

JAFFA
(in love; to Henry) All good...

(Henry no longer feels tense; and
feels in love. Henry nods his
head)

JAFFA
(in love; to Henry) Good man... Good...

(Henry falls to the side of the
haybed. Jaffa smiles and beats
Henry's chest; Henry laughs)

JAFFA
(in love; to Henry) Mr Henry... is such a
good kisser...

(Henry smiles in love)

JAFFA
(in love; to Henry) Good man... Good man...
Mr...

(Henry smiles. Jaffa yawns)

JAFFA
(to Henry) Well Henry... I'm a bit sleepy...
I might head to bed... Love you...

(Henry tilts upwards; and kisses
Jaffa on the lips)

HENRY
(in love; to Jaffa) Goodnight Jaffa...
Goodnight...

JAFFA
(to Henry) Goodnight my protector-

(Henry likes being called a
'protector;' and watches Jaffa
fall asleep.

Henry falls to the side; and closes his eyes - and falls asleep minutes later. THE NEXT MORNING - Henry wakes up; rises and shine; and closes the curtains from the sun blaring in his eyes. He looks at his beloved wife; tilts to the side; and smiles. It is the day of Edith's funeral; Henry looks up at the ceiling; thinking of his grandmother; and gets upset. Jaffa wakes up seconds later; and holds her husband's hand)

JAFFA

(romantic; to Henry) Good morning handsome...

(Henry likes being called 'handsome' and smiles at Jaffa)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) Good morning Jaffa. Good morning...

(Jaffa notices Henry's sadness)

JAFFA

(worried; to Henry) You're missing your grandma hey...

(Jaffa continues holding Henry's hand for support. Henry nods his head; and cries. Jaffa rubs Henry's arm)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) I know you miss her... But I'm sure she's looking at you from heaven... She is... She would be...

(Henry smiles at Jaffa's comments; and kiss her)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) It's okay... It's okay...

(Henry smiles and tilts to the side; leaps forward; and kisses Jaffa. Henry sits up)

HENRY

(saddened; to Jaffa) I miss Grandma... I miss her... Sometimes I... Sometimes I want to talk to her about things... and I can't...

(Jaffa rubs Henry's arm)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) I know... But I'm female to.. You can talk to me... I'm here...

(Henry cries at Jaffa's heartfelt comments to him. Henry kisses Jaffa on the lips again)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) It's okay... Tell me anything... I will always listen...

(Henry cries in love and kisses Jaffa for 2 mins straight. Henry stops. Jaffa hops out of bed; and grabs her formal short black dress)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Righto Henry... You got your tux...

(Henry nods to Jaffa)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) Yeah I uh... I uh do...

(Henry hops out of bed; and grabs the shopping bag with his tuxedo suit inside. Henry grabs the tuxedo suit out of the shopping bag; and gets changed in a separate room. MOMENTS LATER - Henry returns and knocks on the door)

JAFFA

(from inside the room; to Henry) Yeah you can come in...

(Henry opens the door; and enters the reserved room; and notices Jaffa dressed in the formal black dress. Jaffa smiles as she looks at Henry's attire; but notices the black tie done-up wrong again)

JAFFA

(to Henry) Oh your tie... Your tie...

(Jaffa walks forwards to Henry; and does Henry's black tie)

HENRY

(to Jaffa) I've given up on how to do the tie... I have no idea... I guess you can do it for me...

(Jaffa smiles)

JAFFA
(smiles; to Henry) Oh I'd be delighted... my handsome man...

(Henry smiles. Jaffa finishes minutes later; and now looks at Henry's formal attire)

JAFFA
(smiles; to Henry) Magnificent and beautiful... My handsome man...

(Jaffa kisses Henry's lips. Henry smiles as he looks at Jaffa's elegant short-black dress)

HENRY
(to Jaffa) And you... look beautiful. That black dress you're wearing...

JAFFA
(romantic; to Henry) Oh stop it... Just...

(Jaffa kisses Henry on the lips. Henry smiles in love. Fred knocks on the door)

FRED
(from outside; to Henry & Jaffa) Are you ready you two?

JAFFA
(from inside; to Fred) Yes... We are...

FRED
(from outside; to Jaffa) I'll wait for you and Henry by the car.

(Jaffa and Henry look at each other. Minutes later; they make their way by the car. Fred drives himself; and the two to Taylor River - the location of Edith's funeral)

INT. TAYLOR RIVER - EDITH'S FUNERAL
(11:30AM)

(Henry, Jaffa and Fred arrive at Edith's funeral - the only attendees are Henry, Jaffa & Fred. They surround themselves by the sound and nature of Taylor River; and the birdlife surrounding it. Fred starts off the funeral with his speech)

FRED

(to everyone) Righto... Edith was a truly good friend. The mother of the daughter who I had a deep crush on at school. But most of all; Edith had a kind, helping heart...

(Henry begins crying and grieving; with the loss of his grandmother)

FRED

(to everyone) She was a mother... a grandmother; a grandmother-in-law; and a best friend. A counsellor who helped and contributed to the mental health of this community. A truly remembered treasure who shall never be forgotten... I will miss her; as well as everyone else... (to Henry) Henry...

(Henry wipes his tears; and starts giving out his remembrance speech)

HENRY

(cries; to everyone) Grandma... Grandma was the world to me.... She gave me a reason to live everyday, even at times I felt like giving up; and didn't want to keep going.... She was everything to me.... everything... and I mean everything.... Everything...

(Henry cries to himself; and stops speaking. Jaffa walks towards Henry; and comforts him)

HENRY

(cries; to Jaffa) I can't talk no more... I can't talk no more... I can't... I can't...

(Henry stops talking)

JAFFA

(comforts Henry) I will.. I will talk.. It's my turn...

(Henry cries and nods his head. Jaffa begins her speech)

JAFFA

(to everyone) I didn't know Edith very long; not like Henry and Fred. But of the time I knew her; I knew she was a kind-hearted, treasured person to be around. Someone who cured my schizophrenia; someone who is a super-counsellor...

(Henry smiles; but is still grieving)

JAFFA

(to everyone) Overall, a most respectful, loving woman. The best grandmother-in-law I'll ever have.... I will miss her deeply..

(Jaffa finishes speaking. Henry cries in Jaffa's arms. Minutes later - the hearse arrives with Edith's coffin inside; and drives Fred, Henry & Jaffa to Taylor Official Cemetery. Minutes later; they arrive)

 INT. TAYLOR OFFICIAL CEMETERY - EDITH'S GRAVE

(Edith's corpse has been buried. Henry, Jaffa and Fred attend by Edith's grave; and watches the headstone be carved "The most respectful counsellor in Taylor. With great helpfulness. Remembered always - Edith." Henry cries as he deeply misses his grandmother; Jaffa comforts him by stroking his back. Fred and Jaffa are saddened; at the loss of each of their personal relationships they had had with Edith)

FRED
 (saddened; to grave) We will miss you Edith... We will...

(Henry cries deeply)

FRED
 (saddened; to grave) We will miss you... Let's hope you're in a better place now than this world... Let's hope...

(Henry cries in Jaffa's arms. Jaffa has a bouquet of roses in her other hand; Henry stops hugging Jaffa minutes later. Jaffa makes her way closer to the grave; with the bouquet of roses in her hand)

JAFFA
 (saddened; to grave) I will miss you a lot Edith... I will miss talking to you about your grandson; and my husband. I promise I will help lead him to the right direction in life; and give him a good life. I will always be there for him. With great respect...

(Jaffa puts the bouquet of roses on Edith's grave. Henry cries at Jaffa's words; and in grief. Henry makes his way closer to the grave; and pays his respects)

HENRY

(grieving; to grave) Grandma... I... I miss you...

(Jaffa comforts Henry; by stroking his back)

HENRY

(grieving; to grave) I miss you... I wish you were here with me... Giving me lady advice... I miss having chats with you... You were... You were the light of my world... Now all I see... all I see is darkness... I miss you... I want you so bad...

(Jaffa continues comforting Henry. Henry steers away from the grave; Jaffa follows Henry)

FRED

(to Henry & Jaffa) All right... you two... Let's go home...

(Henry cries in Jaffa's arms; Jaffa guides Henry to the car. Minutes later - Pastor Jackson stumbles by and grabs Jaffa's hand. Jaffa screams in shock; Henry panics)

PASTOR JACKSON

(angrily; to Henry) It was you who killed your grandmother... You killed your own grandmother YOU DEVIL...

(Jaffa tries to break free. Pastor Jackson's words upset Henry deeply)

JAFFA

(annoyed; to Pastor Jackson) No that's not true.. It wasn't Henry... The killer was a man named Bobby. Please... let me go...

HENRY

(scared; to Pastor Jackson) No please... Let Jaffa go... Let Jaffa go... Please let her go...

FRED

(annoyed; to Pastor Jackson) Let Jaffa go now...

PASTOR JACKSON

(laughs; to Fred) Let Jaffa go with him... Nah ah... She deserves a long-lengthy life with a normal man... I'll find her another man... She's not going to be with this devil...

(Henry becomes upset; and grabs Jaffa's hand off of Pastor Jackson - grabbing her; and placing her behind him. Pastor Jackson grabs his shotgun; and aims it at Henry's chest)

PASTOR JACKSON

(annoyed; to Henry) Henry... Devil... if you don't let Jaffa go now... I'm going to have to kill you...

(This upsets Henry. Pastor Jackson still has his shotgun aimed at Henry's chest)

HENRY

(cries; to Pastor Jackson) I've done nothing to you... I've done absolutely nothing... Please... Please...

PASTOR JACKSON

(annoyed; to Henry) You've hurt a lot of people Henry... Coppers, the Army for crying out loud... Don't you see how dangerous you are... You can't be stopped. You're too powerful...

HENRY

(cries; to Pastor Jackson) I wasn't asked to be born like this... I wish I was normal... I so bloody wish I was... I hate living with this freak ability of mine... I hate it...

PASTOR JACKSON

(annoyed; to Henry) Which is why.... You must be killed. You can't live anymore... It's only a matter of time you will get angry; and kill Jaffa... only a matter of time... By accident who knows... I sense her death is coming with you as the prime killer...

(This haunts Henry)

JAFFA

(whispers to Henry) Henry... Don't listen to him... He's getting in your head... He's...

(Henry starts to fear the future)

HENRY

(sobs; to Pastor Jackson) No... I won't let that happen... It will never happen... I will make sure Fred and Jaffa are armed if I ever went crazy.. I'll make sure of that... I will...

PASTOR JACKSON

(annoyed; to Henry) Henry... Guns won't stop you... The devil must die... and Mary must be saved...

(Pastor Jackson shoots Henry in the chest; Henry falls down on his back; screaming in agony with one hand on his chest. A frantic Jaffa bends down; and looks at her severely harmed husband)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... Henry...

(Henry's powers uncontrollably tear the front-tuxedo suit off of Henry; leaving him shirtless. The bullet wound is fatal; Jaffa puts her hand on Henry's barechest. Henry grabs Jaffa's hand)

JAFFA

(frantic; to Henry) Henry... Henry... Henry...

(Henry coughs deeply as death is coming)

JAFFA

(frantic; to Henry) Henry... Henry... Henry...

HENRY

(dying; to Jaffa) Jaffa... Jaffa... I... I love (coughs frantically) You... Me love you...

JAFFA

(frantic; to Henry) No Henry... I'll extract the bullet out... Fred will help...

(Fred bends down; and puts his hand on Henry's barechest - feeling his heartbeat. Fred instantly knows Henry is dying)

PASTOR JACKSON

(annoyed; to Henry) May the devil perish in hell...

(Pastor Jackson prepares to leave. Fred notices)

FRED

(shouts at Pastor Jackson) Eh... Eh... Don't leave...

(Pastor Jackson makes an escape. Fred is annoyed; and diverts his attention back to the dying Henry)

FRED

(to Henry) Henry... Henry...

(Henry frantically coughs. Henry lifts his hand up; and notices his body self-destructing itself; knowing he is going to die. Jaffa notices Henry's veins turning bright red)

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry... We will get through this... Let me get my surgical utensils from my bag.. Just...

(Fred grabs Jaffa's hand)

FRED

(saddened; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Henry is... he's dying.. His body is self-destructing itself...

(Henry cries as he looks at Jaffa one last time)

HENRY

(dying; cries to Jaffa) Jaffa... It's okay... It's... (coughs frantically) It was good knowing you... Thank you... for being my girlfriend... and looking after me... I appreciate it... I really do...

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Henry...

(Henry puts his index finger on Jaffa's lips)

HENRY

(dying; cries to Jaffa) I will miss you heaps... and heaps...

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) I love you to...

(Jaffa kisses Henry one last time; before he dies)

HENRY

(dying; to Fred) Thank you Fred... for.. for everything... (coughs frantically) Thank you...

FRED

(saddened; to Henry) I'm sorry son... I'm so sorry... Your life has been nothing but attack-after-attack...

HENRY

(dying; to Fred) Grandma, Mum and Jaffa made my life worth it... Thank you Dad... for supporting me as well... Thank you...

(Jaffa holds Henry's hand. Henry looks at Jaffa)

HENRY

(dying; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Goodbye... I will be with my mum and grandma now... Bye...

(Jaffa cries as she continues holding her hand)

FRED

(saddened; to Jaffa) Jaffa. Henry is about to self-destruct. It's going to be dangerous...

JAFFA

(cries; to Henry) Bye handsome... Bye...

(Henry blinks his eyes at Jaffa one last time. Henry's eyes close; and his body begins to self-destruct itself - completely engulfing in flames; and diminishing to nothing. Henry is now dead and non-existent; Jaffa cries)

JAFFA

(cries in shock; to Fred) Fred... FRED. FRED....

(Jaffa begins grieving and cries at the loss of her husband)

FRED

(shocked; to Jaffa) I'm so sorry Jaffa.. I'm so sorry... This is all a...

(Jaffa cries loudly)

JAFFA

(grieving; to Fred) Fred... That pastor has to pay for this... He has to pay... He has to..

FRED

(to Jaffa) He will... The pastor will...

(The scene closes)

INT. ENDING

3 YEARS LATER - FRED'S MONOLOGUE:
A life of Henry James Lovell - I didn't know the young lad too well.

I knew his mother and grandmother. Of the time I knew Henry; and all he went through in his life - Henry was a gentle soul who wanted a normal life; but this society took advantage of him.

Vince died of obesity and chemical imbalance in his body. And Pastor Jackson was arrested and thrown in jail; for the murder of Henry James Lovell.

As with Jaffa - she is a renowned doctor at my practice. She met herself a man named Daniel; and had a son she named James after Henry's middle-name. Jaffa has herself dedicated to a charity; where she helps those who are different.

Henry James Lovell - a young man who was different; but will always be remembered in our hearts.

PART 4 ENDS.

